



The Bancroft Library

University of California • Berkeley

Theos C. Bernard -G. Eleanore Murray Collection and Archive द्याः प्रमः

GRAMMAR

OF THE

TIBETAN LANGUAGE

LITERARY AND COLLOQUIAL.

With copious Illustrations, and treating fully of Spelling, Pronunciation and the Construction of the Verb, and including
Appendices of the various forms of the Verb.

BY

HERBERT BRUCE HANNAH, Esq.,
Barrister-at-Law, and Advocate of the High Court, Calcutta.

BSIEV OF CALCUTTA,

CALCUTTA:

PRINTED AT THE BAPTIST MISSION PRESS. 1912.



DEDICATED

 \mathbf{T} O

E. DENISON ROSS,

TO WHOSE INTEREST IN TIBETAN IT IS DUE THAT THIS

LANGUAGE HAS FOR THE FIRST TIME BEEN

INTRODUCED INTO THE CURRICULUM

OF A UNIVERSITY.

Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2008 with funding from Microsoft Corporation

PREFACE.

For many centuries Tibet has been a terra incognita—little or nothing being known about it, as regards either its physical conditions or its inner life.

Not, indeed, till a few years ago, when a British force entered Lhasa, the "Place of the minor gods," was the veil withdrawn; and even then the withdrawal was only partial, transient, and very local.

As for the language, though there have been several gallant attempts to plunge into the labyrinthine obscurities of its construction—notably on the part of Alexander Csoma de Körös in 1834 and subsequently of H. A. Jäschke—that also, it must be confessed, remains more or less a mystery; for no one, I take it, is likely to aver that the present state of our knowledge on the subject is at all satisfactory.

Much, no doubt, has been contributed by the more recent labours of Rāi Sarat Chandra Dās Bahādur, Mr. Vincent Henderson, the Rev. Edward Amundsen, and Mr. C. A. Bell, I.C.S. But, in spite of all, even they, and every one else who has taken up the study, will admit that, wherever one treads, the ground still feels uncomfortably shaky, especially in regard to certain aspects of the so-called verb; wherever he gropes there is something that seems ever to elude him; and, amid the weird philological phantoms that flit uncertainly around in the prevailing gloom, his constant cry, I feel very sure, is still one for more light.

I do not for one moment claim for this grammar the character of a scientific work. Many years ago when I was studying the language in Darjeeling, under Kāzi Dawa Sam Dūp—a particularly intelligent and scholarly Tibetan—it was my habit during the course of my morning's lesson to make notes of what I then learnt. After a time these notes became so numerous that for my own convenience I was obliged to reduce them to some degree of order. These ordered notes themselves growing in bulk, the idea occurred to me that I might just as well put them into the form of a book, and this I did—the result being a MS. which has long lain by me, but which is now about to be published.

It is merely another attempt on the part of one who has tried

vi PREFACE.

to profit by the works of others, to re-state (originally for his own private satisfaction) what has already been achieved in a field of obscure and somewhat difficult research; to correct or modify previous effort, wherever correction or modification seemed necessary or desirable; and even, to some extent, to supplement it in one or two respects which appeared to be susceptible of further elucidation and expansion.

Both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan have been dealt with, the particular dialect chosen for exposition being that standard one, known as the 555 or \ddot{U} $K\ddot{a}$, which is now spoken in and around the centre of Tibetan Civilisation—Lhasa.

This is the dialect in which, as the result of centuries of developing Lamäic culture, the phonetic values of Tibetan are found to have undergone a greater degree of change from those of the original speech than any of the other dialects.

In other regions of Tibet, it is said, the prefixes, superposed letters, and suffixes, are still more or less pronounced as of old, and the original vowel-sounds are still more or less unaltered, in a degree corresponding to the remoteness of the speakers from, or their proximity to, the Holy City.

The difficulties confronting the student of Tibetan are considerably enhanced by the fact that in addition to the Literary Language and the Modern Colloquial, it also possesses a totally different vocabulary the employment of which is de rigueur when one is conversing or corresponding with a person of quality. This is known as the Honorific Language; and besides that there is another called the High Honorific, which is only used when addressing exalted personages such as the Dalai Lama or the Tashi Lama. With these honorific forms of speech, however, this work is not particularly concerned. The student, if so inclined, can easily hunt them up for himself, after he has acquired a working knowledge of the ordinary literary or book language and the modern colloquial.

Attention is particularly invited to the earlier paragraphs of the Grammar dealing with the important subject of Pronunciation, in which an endeavour has been made, on principles more systematic and accurate than those hitherto in vogue, to ascertain, fix, and express in roman characters, the subtle distinctions that lurk between the numerous phonetic values of the Tibetan consonants and vowels; also

to the paragraph explanatory of the use of the Tibetan Dictionary; and to the tabular statement showing what dominant consonants in a Tibetan word take particular prefixes.

A paragraph has also been exclusively devoted to an exhaustive treatment of the subject of Spelling. This is a most useful accomplishment, and one that the student should take some pains to acquire.

The so-called verb has also been elaborately treated in the body of the book; but in the appendices a novel and perhaps somewhat risky attempt has been made (how far successfully remains to be seen) to present it in the guise of skeleton conjugations or paradigms. These forms, however, should not be taken too literally, as they are not always absolute or rigid expressions, but are liable to frequent modification, or moulding, in accordance with the elusive and temporizing genius of the Tibetan sentence, the construction of which is unique, and can only be appreciated after much mental effort and distress.

As a matter of fact the only real verb in Tibetan is the verb Tobe, whether in the form of \mathbb{W}_{7} \mathbb{Z}^{*} Yin-pa, or \mathbb{W}_{7} \mathbb{Z}^{*} $Y\ddot{o}^{*}pa$, and the beginner is advised to master it at as early a stage as possible in the course of his studies. He should make special note of the manner in which Literary \mathbb{W}_{7} \mathbb{Z}^{*} differs from Colloquial \mathbb{W}_{7} \mathbb{Z}^{*} Also of the important fact that \mathbb{W}_{7} \mathbb{Z}^{*} is sometimes a substantive verb, meaning $Tobe\ present$, $To\ exist$, and sometimes a mere copula or an auxiliary, like \mathbb{W}_{7} \mathbb{Z}^{*}

All other verbs are practically a kind of noun-phrases, dependent for their significations upon the various moods and tenses of these two verbs 📆 ८ and 📆 ४ |

Throughout, the observations explanatory of each subject are followed by numerous illustrations, both Colloquial and Literary, the latter being mostly taken from the Tibetan version of the New Testament—a mine of idiomatic wealth. Amongst these illustrations will be found a few culled from Jäschke's and Das's Dictionaries, or from Amundsen's Primer. In most of such cases either the names or the initials of these authors have been given, but in one or two instances (from Amundsen) on p. 256, the reference has been omitted by an oversight.

Up to a certain stage the romanized equivalent of the Tibetan is given; but after that the student is left to discern the proper pronunciation by means of his own unaided skill.

Here it may interest others as well as students of Tibetan to mention that Oh, the jewel in the lotus! Lieutenant-Colonel Waddell's rendering of the celebrated formula (3)

Om does not mean Oh at all, and the phrase as a whole, is much deeper and more complex in its signification than the above rendering would imply.

Om alone is an all-embracing expression, and stands mystically for the incarnation of the Deity, or rather for the immanence of the Supreme Being in, as well as for Its transcendence above, the phenomenal or existent world, so far as the terms 'immanence' and 'transcendence' are applicable to the relations subsisting between that world and Pure Subsistence. In other words, it stands for the never-ending kosmic process of the self-effacing involution of Paramâtman, or Brahman, into Existence, or the world of Matter, and Its self-expressing evolution through Matter back to Substantial Being. This process, indeed, constitutes the famous so-called "Wheel of Life" in its Kosmic aspect.

The formula may be roughly analysed thus:—

The source of all speech

The source of all speech

of the

Trinity.

ম'ক' - Wish-granting jewel; symbolical of temporal blessings; also of the Psychical Âtman or Spiritual Ego.

ম্ট্র or মৃত্র্ - Lotus; symbolical of biune man and of spiritual re-birth.

້າ - It is, or I am, omnipresent.

58 - Sat, the universal Life Principle, or Satyasya Satyam of the Upanishads, i.e., the Noumenal Reality underlying Empirical Reality.

The entire phrase, therefore, merely in this one limited aspect of its meaning (and it may be read in many other ways) signifies—"The Embodiment of the Trinity, or Incarnation of Deity, is my wish-granting jewel in the lotus of spiritual rebirth"; the idea apparently being that since the Kosmical Ātman, or Brahman, i.e. the first or inner principle of the universe, and the Psychical Ātman, or inner principle of individual Man, are essentially one and the same, our hope of spiritual rebirth is assured in and by the fact of the eternal subsistence of Brahman and the ceaselessness of the kosmic process above referred to—human re-incarnation being a microcosmic effect, or aspect, of the macrocosmic law.

Hence, whenever a lama is heard droning out his $Om\ mani\ p\ddot{a}'$ me $h\bar{u}m$, he is really reciting his version of one of the profoundest creeds known to philosophy—but in most cases probably with an artless ignorance that is equally profound.

Another mistake that one often meets with, especially in Theosophical literature, is that which represents the word Devachan as signifying The dwelling of the gods, doubtless from some vague idea that it is derived from the Perso-Hindustāni words Dewa, 'a god,' and Khān, or Khāneh, 'a dwelling-house.' It is really the Tibetan word \$\frac{7}{5}.55\$.

De-wa chān, meaning 'Blissful.'

No one will be better pleased than myself to see any errors in this book corrected, or doubts removed, by competent critics. I am conscious that there must be errors, and I know there are doubts; while the desire of all who are interested in the language cannot but be to see our knowledge of it advanced.

My acknowledgments are due to the grammarians already named, and especially to Mr. Henderson and Mr. Bell, whose respective manuals and vocabularies marked a considerable advance upon the grammars that they supplemented and, if I may say so, displaced. The earlier grammars by Csoma de Körös and Jäschke were concerned for the most part, if not solely, with archaic classical Tibetan. The former's "Colloquial Phrases" were anything but what would now be regarded as colloquial; while Jäschke's colloquial was that of Western Tibet. These grammars, therefore, were not altogether satisfactory for the purposes of modern requirements. Moreover, the manner in which they dealt with the mysteries of the verb left much to be desired. As for the late Rev. Graham Sandberg's grammar, though very elaborate and learned,

X PREFACE.

it did not really constitute a bar to the successful appearance of the Manuals above alluded to. Indeed it may perhaps be said that not until the publication of Mr. Bell's book were the true forms and functions of the verb, and especially of \$\times_{\sigma}^{\sigma} \times_{\sigma}^{\sigma} \ti

I desire also to acknowledge my obligations to the Hon'ble Vice-Chancellor (Sir Ashutosh Mukerji, Kt.) and Syndicate of the Calcutta University, under whose auspices this contribution to the study of Tibetan has attained the honour and privilege of publication.

Lastly, my grateful thanks are also due to Dr. and Mrs. Denison Ross for much kindness and help accorded from time to time; and perhaps most of all to my Mūnshi, Kāzi Dawa Sam Dūp, and to Mr. David Macdonald of Kalimpong (probably the first Tibetan scholar in India) who was kind enough to go through the entire MS. and to favour me with his critical comments and general approval.

H. B. H.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

		PRELIMINA	RY.			
					i	Page
Ş	1.	The T KA-K'A	• •	• •	• •	1
		I. The M. Kā-li	••	• •	• •	1
		II. The W A - A-LI	••	. •	• •	3
Ş	2.	Romanized Equivalents		• •		5
5	3.	Phonetic Modifications of V	owels			8
		Notes				11
\$	4.	The Six Reversed Letters		• •		15
1	5.	The Seven Consonants to wh	ich 🍃 ma	y be sub jo i	ned	16
Ś	6.	The Fourteen Consonants to	which $\boldsymbol{\mathcal{Z}}^{\mathrm{r}}$	nay be sub	joined	17
Ş	7.	The Six Consonants to which	h $5 may$	be subjoin	ed	18
Ş	8.	The Six Silent Consonants to	which 🖰	may be sub	ojoined	18
Ś	9.	The Sixteen Consonants to w	hich _z n	nay be sub	joined	18
\$	10.	The Twelve Ra-go Consonar	$_{ m nts}$			21
\$	11.	The Ten La-go Consonants		• •		21
3	12.	The Twelve Sa-go Consonan	ts			21
\$	13.	The Five Prefixes				22
1	14.	Initial Letters and the Prefi	ixes each	may take	• •	24
		Notes		• •	• •	28
Š	15.	Peculiarities of Pronunciati	ion			29
\$	16.	The Ten Consonantal Affixed	es			38
S	17.	The Eleven Final Duplicati	ons			34
\$	18.	Colloquial Duplications		• •		37
\$	19.	The Tone System		• •		39
5	20.	Writing and Punctuation		• • •		48

								Page
5	21.	Spe	elling	••	• •	••		5 0
Ş	22.		nslitera		• •	• •	• •	55
Ş	23.	Use	of the	Tibetan Diction	ary			55
\$	2,4.	Ind	licative	and Differentiat	ing Particle	es	• •	57
Ş	25.	Th	e Cases	and their Signs				61
		I.	The N	ominative Case	• •		·	62
		II.	The V	ocative Case				63
		III.	The O	bjective or Accu	sative Case	• •		63
		IV.		enitive Case	• •			63
		V.		ative Case	• •	• •		65
		VI.	The A	gentive Case	••		• •	67
		VII.	The L	ocative Case	• •			69
	V	III.		eriodal or Durati	ional Case	••		71
	•	IX.	The M	lodal Case	• •			78
		X.	The A	blative Case	• •	• •		75
		XI.	The Te	erminative or Tr	ansitive Cas	se		77
Ş	26.	Nv	MERALS					
		I.	The Co	ardinal Numbers	• •	. ,		82
		II.	The Ce	$ardinals\ accordin$	g to Alphab	etical Enu	mera-	
			tie	on	• •	••		88
			Notes	:				
			1.	Pronunciation			• •	86
			2.	Affixes		• •		86
			3.	Conjunctions	• •		• •	87
			4.	The Indefinite	Article			87
			5.	Approximate N	umbers	••		87
			6.	Ordinal Numbe	rs	• •		88
			7.	Distributive Nu	$_{ m imbers}$			88
			8.	Aggregates		• •		88
			9.	Fractions	• •			89
			10.	Adverbial Card	inal Numbe	ers .		90
			11.	" Ordi	nal ,,			91
			12.	Definite and In	definite Nu	merals		9]
			13.	Noun Substant	ives			9:
			14.	Notation by let	ters			93

CHAPTER II.

ETYMOLOGY.

	, 1111010	0.1.			Page
§[:27.	The Definite Article	• •	• •		95
§ 28.	The Indefinite Article	z •		• •	99
§ 29.	The Noun.				
A	-STRUCTURE	• •			101
	1. Monosyllables, Dissyllab	bles, and Po	olysyllables		101
	2. The affix 51/75	. ,	• •		104
	3. The affix $\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{Z}$			• •	104
	4. The affix $\bar{\mathfrak{J}}^{\mathfrak{T}}$	• 6			106
	5. The affix $\exists \tilde{\exists}$				106
	6. Abstract Nouns	• •	• •		106
В.	-Inflexion				
	1. Gender				107
	2. Number	• •			109
	3. Case	• •	• •		111
	I. Noun ending in a	Vowel	• •		111
	II. ,, ,, ,,	বা. or চ.		• •	115
	III. ", ", "	5', 5' or	র .		116
	IV. ,, ,, ,,	ৰ, ম, ম	or a		116
§ 30.	THE ADJECTIVE.				
	I. Form and Place	• •			116
	II. Augmenting of A	$\mathbf{djectives}$	• •	٠.	127
	III. The Comparative	Degree			129
	IV. The Superlative D	egree			131
	V. Other Methods of	Comparison		• •	134
§ 31.	THE PRONOUN.				
	I. Personal Pronoun	ns	• •		135
	II. Declension of Per	rsonal Pron	ouns		138
	III. The Reflexive Pr	onouns	• •		140
	IV. Compounds in	Rang	• •		143

				1 uye
	V. Possessive P	ronouns		
	1. Ordinar	ry Personal Pronouns		144
	2. Reflexi	ve Possessive Pronouns		145
	VI. Demonstrat	ive Pronouns		147
	VII. The Recipro	cal Pronoun		150
	VIII. Interrogativ	e Pronouns		151
	IX. Relative and	Correlative Pronouns		
	A. Relati	ve Pronouns		153
	B. Correla	ative Pronouns		160
	X. Indefinite Pr	onouns		169
§ 32.	Adverbs			177
§ 33.	POSTPOSITIONS			194
§ 34.	Conjunctions		• •	201
§ 35.	ऄॅर्प To be		• •	207
§ 36.	ॲर्-घ' To have		• •	2 2 8
§ 37.	অব্বাম To be	••	• •	229
§ 38.	THE VERB.			
	I. Preliminary	• •	• •	239
	II. Roots	• •	• •	239
	III. Auxiliary Verbs	• •	• •	243
	IV. Auxiliary Particl			
	(1) मी, मी,	_	• •	244
	🗸 (2) শীশ, শীশ	', ŊĀ', etc	• •	245
	(3) मीन मीन,	गुँद', etc	• •	245
	(4) रें, रें, ड़ें	••	• •	246
	, (i) 3T, 9T,	фг	• •	247
	6) 직 팅 and	নহা	• •	248
	(7) 5 ^N		• •	249
	₍₈₎ 고치·			249
	ر (9) ي.		• •	251
	(10) a "			25 2

					Page
	(11) কুঁ	• •	• •	• •	254
	(12) W.				255
	(12)	••	••	• •	
	(13) 55.	• •	• •	• •	25 5
•	(14) 5, 5, 5, 5,	, શુંં, ભ		• •	257
	(15) ন জ্বি and নজ্ব	5.	• •	••	258
	(16) ゼに	• •	• •	• •	259
	(17) 5ूझ' and 5ूझ'ओ	•	• •		259
V.	Moods and Tenses.				
	A.—Infinitive Mood				259
	B.—The Supine				263
	C.—The Verbal Noun		• •		265
	D.—Participles				267
	E.—Gerunds				271
	F.—Indicative Mood.				
	(a) Present	• •			272
	(b) Imperfect				275
	(c) Perfect				276
	(d) Past Indefin	${f nite}$			277
	(e) Pluperfect		• •		279
	(f) Future				281
	G. —Subjunctive and Co	onditional !	Moods		283
	H.—Potential Mood				285
	I. —Probability		• •		288
	J. —Hortative Mood				290
	K.—Purposive Mood				292
	L.—Precative Mood		• •		292
	M.—Permissive Mood	• •			29 3
	N.—Optative Mood				294
	O.—Imperative Mood				296
VI.	The Passive Voice				299
VII.	Compound Verbs				300
III.	Verbs of becoming, gro	owing, char	nging, etc.		303
IX.	Inceptives		• •		303
X.	Imminence				304

					Page
XI.	Continuatives				304
XII.	Finality or Accomplish	ment			308
XIII.	Desideratives	• •			305
XIV.	Frequentatives	• •	• •	• •	300
XV.	Use of the Perfect Ro	от in the (Colloquial		307
				•	
	СНАРТЕ	ER III.			
39.	Syntax			• •	308
	APPENDIX of Co	ONJUGAT	IONS.		
т	•			, ,	010
I.	Colloquial 🔾 To b	e present;	To exist; T	o be	316
II.	LITERARY	Ditte)	• •	315
III.	Colloquial ward To	be		• •	320
IV.	LITERARY Ditto			• •	325
v.	অ্ব'ম' To have ; to pose	8ess	• •	• •	331
VI.			OLLOQUIAL	Verb	
	गोर्नेट्रंच To send			• •	331
VII.	LITERARY Ditto				346
VIII.	Passive, 4-Rooted Cor	LIOQUIAL V	erb महिंद	To	
	be sent	• •		5	349
IX.	Active, one-Rooted Con	LOQUIAL V	erb মর্থি েন	• To	
	see				354
X.	Neuter, one-Rooted Co	LLOQUIAL V	Verb रुमादः	T To	
	be glad, To rejoice		• •		366
XI.	LITERARY Ditto	• •			361
XII.	Passive, 4-Rooted Lit	ERARY Ve	rb मॉर् <u>ट</u> ि .3	or	
	নাইনেম-দ্র-ন To be so	ent			368
XIII.	Active, 2-Rooted Collo	QUIAL Verb	র্নী:বা To	g o	371
XIV.	LITERARY Ditto				378
XV.	2-Rooted LITERARY Ver	р <i>ধন্ম</i> ম.ব.	$To\ become$, etc.	383

CONTENTS.	xvii
-----------	------

		Page
XVI.	Active, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 3574 To do,	
	To make, etc.	387
XVII.	LITERARY Ditto	389
XVIII.	Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 35.5	
	or আঁব্'ম' To be made, To be done, etc	393
XIX.	Passive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb 5.7 To be	
	made, To be done, etc	394
XX.	Passive, Literary Verb 35,44,495, To be	
	made, or done, etc.	. 395



ERRATA ET CORRIGENDA.

Page	4, line	1 a	t bottom.	For	7	read	}
,,	8, ,,	5 from	n ,,	,,	k.	,,	rg
"		13 ,, 6 ,,	top.	,,	i in col. 2 "affected"	"	ī. "effected."
,,	12, ,, 14, ,,	12 ,,	4	,,	"affected" Yata	,,	"effected." $Yat\bar{a}$.
,,	18, ,,	7 ,,	battana	,,	ĽEN-PA	,,	LÈN-PA.
"	19, ,,	2 ,,		,,	Сно	,,	Сн'о.
,,	21, ,,	l a		,,	श्रम्।	,,	ম্মী
,,	21, ,,	2 fro		; ,	Heda	,,	Head.
,,	22, ,,	7 ,,	bottom.	,,	~ श.	"	
"	22, ,, 23, ,,	6 ,, 11 ,,		,,	Ďа Ğев	,,	Ďа. ĞĒв.
>>	25, ,,	7 ,	4	,,	Ğ'Ā	,,	Ğ'ā.
,,	27, ,, 27, ,,	8 ,, 7 ,,		,,	Ž ditto.	,,	Ž.
"	28, ,,	4 ,,	• • •	"	Ва́в	,,	В а́в.
,,	31, ,,	6 ,,		,,	m	,,	n.
,,	31, ,,	4 ,,	bottom.	"	Bar Ba	,,	BAR, and BA.
,,	33, ,,	3 ,,	top.	,,	Ž _H YU	,,	ŽHYU, and
	35, ,,	6 ,,	bottom.	,,	ŽHYUM	,	Žну∪м. क
",	48, ,,	ξ		,,		,,	j
,,		5 ,	, ,,	,,	"lines loping"	,,	"line slop- ing."
,,	49, ,,	9 ,	, top.	,,	ম	,,	단
,,	49, ,,	14 ,	, ,,	,,	" up "	,,	" at."
,,	56, ,,	3,		,,	(H)	>2	त्रु
,,	68, ,,	l a	t ,,	,,	Ś	,,	é.

```
Page 89, line 10 from bottom.
                                   For ZHYI read ZHYI.
                                                 ditto.
      89, ,,
               3
                            ,,
                                      ,,
                                                 ditto.
      89, ,,
               4
                           top
                   ,,
                                     ,,
                                                 ditto
                                                          in both places
      89, ,,
                            ,,
 ,;
                                     ,,
                                                    read Źhyi'.
                                         Zhyi'
      91, ,,
                   ,,
                            ,,
                                     ,,
 ,,
                                                          ŹHYI'.,
                                         Zнуі'
      91, ,,
                                     ,,
                            ,,
 ,,
                                         Zhyić
                                                          ŹHYIĠ.
      91, ,,
               4
                                                      ,,
 ,,
                            ,,
                                         5
                                                          گار
     106, ,, 11
                            ,,
 ,,
    139, last line.
                                         ニィイイ.
                                                          ニメア.
     140, line 12 from bottom.
                                         Ă.
                                        या:री:
                                                         मारे
     151, ,, 12
                            ,,
                                         Delete or between 3 and Ex.
     153, ,, 10
    169, ,,
                                                         read that.
               1
                   at
                          top
                                         hath
                                        महिंद्राय र
                                                          ,, गर्दायर
     243, ,, 10 from
                          bottom.
                                     ,, <sup>'</sup>পুর্য়'
     262, ,,
               ^{2}
                          top.
                                     " पर्ग्रासद्
     306, ,,
                          bottom.
              6
                                                              श्रेवः
                                          প্ৰব.
     329, ,,
                ^{3}
     347, last line. Delete second and third dot between \(\pi \)5\(\pi\)
                               and মান্ত্ৰ
                                    Read " might be sent."
     351, line 11 from bottom.
                                    Delete " विना or जैना or रेम।"
     371, ,, 11
                                        and re-insert after "Particle" on
                                        next previous line.
                                    For अमुर
                                                         read মান্দ্রাম
    381, ,, 5
                          top.
                                     " दर्गेर
                                                           " दर्गेरः
                         bottom.
    382, ,, 10
                                                           " \hat{\xi} and for
     386, ,, 8
                            ,,
                                                           ,, दें
```

CORRIGENDA—(continued).

Page 66 (middle of page).

Delete the words "some uncertainty," and substitute the words "personal knowledge and is certain."

Also delete the word "almost."

Also delete the words "at all," and substitute the word "exactly."

Also delete the words "only hazarding the statement," and substitute the words "speaking on information."

Page 207 (bottom of page).

Delete the words "an emphatic or positive statement is intended," and substitute the words "the speaker expresses knowledge derived from information."

After the words "No there is not," insert the words "(so I am informed)."

Then add the following:-

"A57] is used when the speaker expresses personal knowledge and certainty. Thus:—

মন্ষা মন্ত্র No, there is not (I know). (See also p. 66)."



Tibetan Grammar.

CHAPTER I.

PRELIMINARY.

§ 1.—The η Ka-K'a, or Tibetan Graphic System.

I.— শ্ম Kā-li, or Consonantal Series of thirty letters.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks.
η	Ka	Like K in the Urdu word کب KAB, When. A compact sound.
P	K'a	Kh , forcibly aspirated. Like the Persian \dot{z} Kh .
피	Ġа	Pronounced softly, from low down in the throat, rather more sharply than hard English G , and in a way that to English ears seems to give it the sound of K .
ע	Nga	Like the sound of ng in the English word $sing$. It often begins a word in Tibetan. As a final, often represented by a superscribed o, called o 75 c Lä'-kor, or o $cipher$.
3	Cha	Like the Ch in charge. A compact sound.
ಹ	Chʻa	Chha. A forcibly aspirated ch.
E	Ja, J'a	Like the J in jar . As an initial it is slightly aspirated, and may be pronounced like \mathfrak{F} ch .

N.B.—For the powers of these letters, as represented by their romanized equivalents, see § 2.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks
3	Nya	Like the combined sound of the nya in lanyard.
5	Ta	A compact dental sound, like the Urdu of Persian , or the Bengali .
ঘ	T'a	Also dental, but forcibly aspirated.
5	Ďа	This is not exactly a dental d , nor is it an aspirated d , as sometimes described, but a dental sound, rather like the th in $think$, as pronounced by some Irishmen; or like the Bengali \forall , but with a strong similarity to a dental t . A soft sound.
٩	Na	A dental N, softly sounded.
7	Pa	English P, but more fully and compactly pronounced.
4	P'a	Not Ph (i.e. F, or Fh), but P-h. A strong aspirate.
٦	Ba	Sharper than the English B , and rather like P , but softer than the latter.
श	Ma	English M , sometimes abbreviated into o, written over the initial, and representing final m , and called o $m = m = m = m = m = m = m = m = m = m $
र्ड	Tsa	Like the sound of Ts, or Russian Tsē. A compact sound.
ಹ	Ts'a	Not Tsh, but Ts-h, strongly aspirated.
Ę	D z'a	Not Dzh, but Dz-h. Aspirated.
검	Wa	English W.
9	Źhya	Something like the French J in $jadis$, or Persian $_{j}$, or Russian Zhē, but with a tendency towards the sound sh , and also with the ya sound. Hence, hard $z'hya$, or soft $shya$.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks.
я	Źa	English Z , but inclining to sound of s .
લ	, 'a	Spiritus lenis, with a vowel-sound like that in the Urdu word بح Bas, Enough; but soft and long, as though gently emanating from the throat. In words from Sanskrit it is used as a "mora," to denote prosodical length, i.e. a long syllable.
, W	Ya	English Y, as in yard, you, yoke, ye, yes, yiddish, yea.
τ	Ra	English R , well sounded.
ત્ય	La	English L , but, at the end of a syllable, sounded either very faintly or not at all, and sometimes changed to \mathbf{x} Ra .
		onangou to vita.
9	Sha	Sh. Full, strong sound.
শ	Sa	S. Full, strong sound, like ss in hiss, but, at the end of a syllable, not sounded at all.
5	На	H. Well aspirated.
দে	A	Like the vowel-sound in the Urdu word بس Bas, Enough. Pronounced very short: but a harder, fuller and compacter sound than that of Q. The sound of الحالة sound of الحالة is inherent in all simple non-final
		consonants unqualified by any vowel-sign, and in all compound consonants sounding as one, when similarly unqualified. It is not inherent in the
		consonant A which has a softer and more emanating sound.

II.—The IN A A-LI, or Vowel-Series, being five vowels, and four vowel-signs. For the purpose of illustrating the signs, one of the vowels, namely, IN A, which is also regarded as a consonant by Tibetans, is adopted as a basis. Any other consonant, however, would do equally well.

Letter.	Name.	Remarks.
121	a	Like a in بس Bas, Enough. Pronunciation short, hard, compact and full. Inherent in all nonfinal consonants not qualified by any vowel-signs, and in single-letter and compound-letter syllables sounding as one syllable, when similarly unqualified. Thus, in ﷺ T'ANG, Path, it is inherent
		in \(\frac{\mathfrak{Z}}{2} \) but not in the final \(\mathfrak{Z}' \). So it is inherent in
		S' NGA, I, but not in S' NGO, Face; and in
		ন্ন LA, Pay, salary, but not in মু' Lu, song. It
		also ceases to inhere by reason of modifications other than qualifying vowel-signs, as will hereafter be shown. See § 3.
Š	i	Short, like the i in is. The sign is a called A
		G'I-G'U, The Angle, and it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus, T KYI, A sign of the Genitive Case.
ধ্য	u	Short, like the u in $full$. The sign is \circ called
9		প্রমান্ত Źнуль-күш, The hook, and it is placed
		under the letter it modifies. Thus, 5 D'v, A sign of the Terminative Case.
खे	е	Short, like a in made, or the Italian e. The sign is - called ATT DENG-BU, The standing
		stroke, and it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus, $\widehat{\mathbf{x}}^*\widehat{\mathbf{x}}^*$ Re-re, each.
উ	0	Short, like the o in for, or rock. The sign is ~
		called NA-RO, The horns over the nose, and
		it is placed over the letter it modifies. Thus, $\widetilde{\Xi}$
		Ro, A corpse; निंद Gong, Price; न्निंग प Lod-
		PA, To read; TT Lo', Lightning; To Do, Stone.

§ 2.—The ROMANIZED EQUIVALENTS adopted in this work, showing the Powers of the thirty consonants.

Tibetan Character.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
		Acute accent, used for instance with g , when \P Ga, is pronounced almost like k ; and with d , when \P Da, is pronounced almost like T . Thus, \P Gong, $Price$, because it is pronounced nearly like Kong; but \P Go, $Price$, pronounced like the ordinary hard English g . So also \P De, The , $That$, because it is pronounced almost like dental TE ; but \P DI, The , $This$, pronounced as dental d .
	U	This sign, placed over any letter, signifies a raising of the tone.
	,	Spiritus lenis, or gentle breathing. It is placed before a, thus 'a, to represent \mathfrak{A}^* For example, $\mathfrak{A}\mathfrak{P}\mathfrak{A}^*$ K' \mathfrak{A} , $Order$, $Command$. For simplicity's sake, however, we shall seldom use it. It will never be used to represent \mathfrak{A}^* as a prefix.
••	c	Spiritus asper, or rough breathing. Thus K'A, for KHA. e.g., ABT' K'YER-WA, To carry away.
Щ	K	Tonic pitch high.
F	K'	Pitch lower than K .
न्	Ġ	Pitch deep.

Tibetan Character.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
ন্ guarded	\mathbf{G}	e.g.—닭자 ĞAM, Box, Chest. Pitch higher than g.
ς .	m Ng	Pitch low; sometimes represented by o Lä'-kor, o cipher.
₹	Ch	Pitch very high.
a వ	Chʻ	Pitch lower than ch.
E	J, J ^c	When an initial, represented by J'. Thus E' J'A, Tea. When it has a prefix, represented by J. Thus, QEN'A' JÜ-PA, To cling; SEA'A' JÄ-WA, To come to, To meet, To pay one's respects to. Pitch very low.
3	Ny	Pitch low.
5	Т	Pitch very high.
ঘ	T'	Pitch lower than T.
5	Ď	Pitch very low.
5' guarded	D	$e.g.$ $=$ $\tilde{\xi}^*$ Do, $Stone$. Pitch higher than D.
ब	\mathbf{N}	Pitch low.
ব	P	Pitch very high.
শ	P	Pitch lower than P .
7	B, W, V	Pitch very deep.
ਮ' and o		o (called o TTT LX'-KOR, cipher). Is sometimes placed on top of a letter, and stands for a final ng, or m, or ms. The pitch of \mathbf{K} is low.

Tibetan Character.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
र्ड	Ts	Pitch high.
ಹ ೆ	Ts'	Pitch lower than Ts.
Ę	Dz'	Pitch very low.
앰	· w	Pitch low.
9	Źhy	Pitch very low. e.g., and ŽHYĀ-MO, Hat, pronounced almost like Shā-Mo.
я	Ź	e.g.,—\(\mathbf{T}\)\tag{Z}_A-WA, \(To\)\ eat, \(\text{pronounced almost like SA-WA}\). \(\text{Pitch very low}.\)
٩	'A	When Q is a prefix, it is not transliterated at all in this work. Pitch very low.
W	· Y	Pitch very low.
٠,	R	Pitch low.
ผ	${f r}$.	Lowest pitch of all.
-9 l	Sh	
শ	S	Pitch high.
5	Н	Pitch very high.
জ	A	Pitch low.

Note.—The remarks in column 3 regarding Tonic Pitch refer to the Rev. Mr. Amundsen's Tone-system. I would, however, advise the student to direct his attention to the compactness or otherwise of his utterance, and to the shortness or length of his vowel-sounds, rather than to Pitch of Tone. See § 19.

Other letters, compound and reversed, are not included in the above tables. They are dealt with in §§ 4 et seq.

§ 3.—Phonetic Modifications of the Five Vowels. These are based on § A, as representing any of the thirty consonants.

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
ঙা	a	Short, hard and compact, as already explained. Ex. ANN K'AM, Empire, Realm. Pronounced, as regards the vowel-sound, exactly like that of the English word Come.
196		IN differs from Q in that the latter is a long, slow and gentle emanation, while IN is uttered forcibly.
RN+네紅.) RN+너.)	ā	Long, like a in English far. Ex. সাম্ব K'র, Order, Command; মেস্ম Lর, A courteous expression.
ন্ত্ৰ প্ৰাপ্ত	ā	Long, like a in far. Ex. 可识 Kā-sha, A sort of grass; 万风文景쟁 Tā-le-la-ma, Dalai Lama, or Ğyã-wa rim-po-ch'e; 景彩 L'ā-sa.
	â, ā, wā,	Long, like the o in corner, or the aw in Bawl, or the Chinese wā as in Kwān, in transliterations from Sanskrit, Indian, Chinese or other foreign languages. Thus, Sirial Ra-Me-shâ-ra, A holy place near Lanka or Ceylon; Ra-Me-sha-ra, A holy place near Lanka or Ceylon; Ra-Me-sha-ra, A holy place near Lanka or Ceylon; Ra-Ma-sha-ra, Last Emperor of China of the Tartar dynasty; Ra-Ra-Ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra-ra

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
ष्य+द ः }	ä	wise have read NGA-PO; 5AN-Y ĎA-PO, A district of Tibet south-east of Ü and Kong-po, which might otherwise have read ĞA-PO. Short, like a in can. Ex. AGA-Y ZHYÄN-PA (pronounced ZHYÄM-PA) other; or, 55-X
		Da'-Pa, Faith. Long, like a in can't, as pronounced by a
rat+ơi. Rat+ai.	ä	Yankee. Ex. শুনার্কা Nye-মন, Disciple, Pupil: ক্র্মান্টা or উপন-Po, King.
W .	i	Short, like i in is. Ex. 🖏 ८८ YIN-PA (pronounced YIM-PA), To be.
항+여. 항+화. 항+최. 항+네紅	ï	Long, like i in ravine. Ex. 독특히지다 Ji-PA, To be afraid; 취정 Ġi, A sign of the Agentive Case; 독립자자 KYi-LA, Among, amid, in the midst.
ું. હું	ī	Also long, like i in ravine. Used in transliterations from foreign languages. Ex. A. Shṛ-LA, Moral conduct; 🎖 🎖 🏋 🏋 T PUN-DARÈ-KA, White lotus; 🐧 Shrṭ, Glory.
હ્યે.	e	Short, like a in made, or Italian e. Ex. $\hat{\xi}$. DE, The, That.
स्रु+ष. स्रु+श. स्रु+ध.	ē	Like the preceding, but long. Ex. 지기지치 ĞĒ, Devil, Demon, Evil-spirit; 여자기 SHE- PA, To know; 회자기 SEL-WA, or SĒ-WA, To absolve.

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
ध्ये+दः ध्ये+दः	è	Short, like e in get. Ex. & T Ch'èn-po (pronounced Ch'èm-po), Great, Big, Large; $\widehat{\mathfrak{I}}$ $\mathfrak{$
હ્યેં'	ai	Like i in mind. Ex. 可识可 Kai-lā-sha, A mountain on the N. shore of Lake Manasarowar; 影竟 Maitri, Love, Friendship; 克河 Tai-Ling-ga, The modern Telingana.
প্ত্	u	Short, like u in pull. Ex. $\sqrt{3}$ Thur-po, Active; $\sqrt{3}$ Bu, Worm; $\sqrt{5}$ Ch'u, Water.
প্র+নাশ	ũ	Long, like oo in snooze. Ex. 지역기자각 ŽHYU PA, To sit.
ই৫) ই৫৫)	ũ	Same as preceding. Ex. \$\frac{7}{3}\frac{7}{3}\cdot \text{WAI DU-}}\$ RYA, Azure stone, Lapis lazuli; \$\frac{5}{3}\cdot \text{HUM}, A terrifying or angry expression. \$\frac{7}{3}\text{Y}
		A terrifying or angry expression.
জু+ব ⁻ }	ü	Like u in French une. Ex. スラギ ĎゼN, Seven; 剝5、ギ Ků'-pa, Thread.
^ୟ +ଅ. }	, ti	Same as last, but long. Ex. 5시 Ď'ë, Period, Time; 병자 Yö, Land, Country.
€ম.	o	Short, like o in for, or rock. This is the commonest o in Tibetan. Ex. 百节

Tibetan Sound.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
3:	,	Bazaar; 以刊 YA'-PO, Good; 克蓋· T Zo-WA, To build; A Lo, Year; B 私 K'YI-MO, Bitch; 黃 五 J'o-wo, Nobleman, master, lord; 五 Po-'o, Grandfather.
छ्य-माश	ō	Long, like o in mode. Ex. ঠ্লামা Ts'ō, A crowd, a multitude.
EN.	ō	Like the last. Used only in transliterating. Ex. 575 Gō-ta-ma, Buddha's name.
હેર્ય + વ ' } હેર્ય + વ ' }	ö	Short, like eu in French Jeune. Ex. ১মীর্থ Ğön-pa (pronounced Ğöm-pa), A monastery; উত্তর্গ Chö'-pän, Diadem.
ট্র +ম: } ট্র +ম: }	ö	Same as last, but long. Ex. 55. Ch'ő, Religion; 3.57. Nya-d'ő, Fishing net.
₩.Z. G	au, ou	Like ou in Noumenon. Ex. $\overline{\eta}$ Sometimes also spelt \overline{u} Gou-rima. Sometimes also spelt \overline{u} Gou-ta-ma, Gou-
		ta-ma.

Notes.

1.—In the above Tabular Statement the sign + in column 1 means "as modified by the addition of." It will be seen that the basic, inherent "" a is subject to modifications, not only when quali-

fied by vowel-signs, but also when followed or subjoined by \mathfrak{F} , and \mathfrak{F} , or when subjoined by \mathfrak{F} . Ha, or \mathfrak{F} wa-zur, or when followed by \mathfrak{F} , Na, \mathfrak{F} La, \mathfrak{F} Da, \mathfrak{F} Sa, and \mathfrak{F} Ga-sa, which last is sometimes represented by the abbreviation \mathfrak{F} Ta-log-ta, i.e. \mathfrak{F} Ta reversed, and called \mathfrak{F} \mathfrak{F} \mathfrak{F} \mathfrak{F} Ga-sa-da-kyo'.

2.—In words containing those vowel-modifications which are affected by A' la, the A' when pronounced, should be uttered very softly. Often it is not pronounced at all. e.g., 55A' ŇGÜL, or ŇGÜ, Money; ANA'E' SÖL-J'A, or SÖ-J'A, Tea.

Where A', as a final, is followed by the particle A' wa, the latter, in the Colloquial, is often changed into X' ra. e.g., ABTATATORY (instead of A') ABTATORY CH'O'-PA BÜ-RA NANG-WA, To sacrifice (Honorific form). Sometimes, however, A' is merely duplicated. See § 18.

which are affected by 5' D'a, or 5' G'a, or sometimes 5' G'a-sa, the following peculiarity should be noted. In the case of monosyllabic words or final syllables ending in one of the above letters, such letter is not exactly pronounced. Yet it is hinted at; for, just before pronouncing it, the speaker stops short, and, by a sharp contraction of the glottis, forms a kind of innominate sound, which perhaps is best described by reference to the Persian or Arabic & 'ain, or to the curious throat-sound emitted by some Glaswegians when, instead of saying Saturday, they say Se'urday, or instead of saying water, they say wa'er. This emphasized hiatus-sound will be represented by an apostrophe. Ex. 55'5' J'E'-PA, To do; 557 CH'A', Hand (Honorific term);

ই স্ট্রান্ত Nyi-চত', Parasol. In particular, as regards syllables ending in স' G'a, the following rules may be observed:—

- (a) When the syllable forms a word by itself, like ③可 CHI'

 '(Chig'), A, an; ЭЭ¬ Ďu' (Ďuġ), Is; or 河河 Sho'

 (Shog'), Imperative of 河口 YONG-WA, To come, the 可

 G'a should never be pronounced, but only hinted at, in manner above described.
- (b) When the syllable in which স্' or স্থা occurs is only one in a word of two or more syllables, and is not the final syllable, the স্' or স্থা may be pronounced, or only hinted at, at pleasure. Ex. ইন্নি টার্ড-PA, or টার্ড-PA, sin: ইন্নি টার্ড-চের্ড, or টার্ড-PA, or টার্ড-PA, yaɗ-Po, or Ya'-Po, Good; মানুন্ধান্তি উপ্ত-Po, or উপ্তর্জন Po, Quick.
- (c) Practically the same rules may be observed as regards final 叫 la. Ex. C叫 NGA, Fatigue, and 氧和可 ĎEL-wa, or ĎE-wa, To fasten on.
- 4.—A consonant, having a prefix, but no affix, nor any qualifying vowel-sign, must be supported by the lengthening affix $\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet, a}$, which prevents the prefix from being mistaken for an initial letter. Ex. $\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}$ K'\bar{A}, Order, command, word; $\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}\mathbf{Q}^{\bullet}$ D'\bar{A}, Arrow.
- 5.—\(\beta^*\) B, is usually pronounced W, when, in a word of more than one syllable, it is the initial letter of the second or other following syllable, and the final letter of the immediately preceding syllable is either \(\beta^*\beta^*\beta^*\) or \(\alpha^*\), or if such preceding syllable does not end in a consonant, but is governed by inherent \(\beta^*\), or one of the

vowel-signs. $\[\neg \]$ also takes the sound of w when it is prefixed by $\[\neg \]$, $\[\dot{D}a$, and has no modifying vowel-sign or $\[Yata \]$ sign. In the latter case it takes the sound of the modifying signs. Ex.:— $\[\neg \]$, $\[\nabla \]$, $\[V \]$, $\$

The letter ∇ Ba, when sounding as a w, and followed by ∂ i, is pronounced somewhat like the hard Russian vowel oi, but with a w before it, or something like the English word way, save that the a must be given the vowel-sound of W, and merged into the succeeding i, so as to make the two into a sort of diphthongal sound.

§ 4.—The six reversed (i.e. মৃত্য' lo') letters. Used chiefly in transliterations from Sanskrit, Pāli, etc.

Letter.	- Name.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
5	Ta-log-ţa or Ga-sa-da Kyó	Ţ ċ	The dental letter 5 Ta reversed and pronounced as a palatal. A common abbreviation for the double affix $\P N = Ex$. 5557 Pung-Rō, instead of 5555
Þ	T'a-log't'a	T '	\mathfrak{F}^* T^*a reversed, and pronounced as an aspirated palatal.
7	Ďa-log-ḍa	Р	5. Ďa reversed, and pronounced as an unaspirated palatal, much as some Irishmen pronounce the th in think.
7 5	Na-loģ-ņa	Ņ	The dental letter \mathfrak{F} Na reversed, and pronounced as a palatal.
Pr	Sha-log-Kʻa	K '	Sha reversed, and pronounced like K 'a.
FD.	Ka-Sha-log-tā- pa (지기자기) K'ya	K 'y	\mathfrak{M}^{\bullet} Ka , with a reversed \mathfrak{S}^{\bullet} Sha subjoined. Pronounced like \mathfrak{F}^{\bullet} $K^{\bullet}ya$, strongly aspirated.

3

- § 5.—The seven consonants to which W' Ya, in the form of MAY BE SUBJOINED. W' so subjoined is called W'757N' or W'757' YA-TĀ, Ya-subjoined.
 - \mathfrak{J} This is Kya, and it is so pronounced.
 - f This is K'ya, and it is so pronounced.
 - This is Gya, and it is pronounced as some Irishmen pronounce Garden, guide, etc., i.e. Gyarden, Gyide, etc.
 - This is Pya, but YA-TĀ changes the pronunciation into that of \mathfrak{F} Cha.
 - This is $P^{i}ya$, but YA-TĀ, changes the pronunciation into that of \mathcal{E}^{i} $Ch^{i}a$.
 - This is Bya but YA-TĀ' changes the pronunciation into that of E' That is to say, when J' is an initial, it is pronounced J', which is practically like E' Cha; when not an initial, it is pronounced J. If prefixed by J' Da, it is pronounced Y; and if further qualified by a vowel-sign, it takes the Y sound merged into the vowel-sound. Ex. JJ' YAR, Summer; JJKN' YING, Region, space (e.g. Heaven's vault); JJ' YUG-PA, or YU'-PA, To brandish, flourish; JJ' YEN-CH'E-WA, To separate.
 - This is Mya, but YA-TA changes the pronunciation to that of $\mathbf{\mathcal{G}}$ Nya.

§ 6.—The fourteen consonants to which $\vec{\xi}$ Ra, in the form of $\vec{\xi}$, may be subjoined. $\vec{\xi}$ so subjoined is called $\vec{\xi}$ $\vec{\eta}$ or $\vec{\xi}$ Ra-ta, Ra-subjoined.

Letter.	Name.	Romanized Equivalent.	Remarks.
时 照 市 小 國 元 多 元 初 和 田 和 只	Ka-ra-tā-Ṭa Kʻa-ra-tā-Ṭʻa Ga-ra-tā-Ṭa Ta-ra-tā-Ṭa Tʻa-ra-tā-Ṭa Ďa-ra-tā-Ṭa Na-ra-tā-Ṭa Pʻa-ra-tā-Ṭa Pʻa-ra-tā-Ṭa Ba-ra-tā-Ṭa Ba-ra-tā-Ṭa	Ţ Ţ Ţ Ţ Ţ M	Like で ・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・・
松松	Sna-ra-tā-Shra Sa-ra-tā-Sa	Shr S	This is the pronunciation in Literary
	Sa-ra-tā-Ṭa	Ţ	Tibetan and in Sikhim and Būtān. This palatal pronunciation is the pronunciation in 与灵弘、艾公、广、 Ü-P'Ä-KÄ', Colloquial of Ü.
	Sa-ra- t ā-Hra	\mathbf{Hr}	Pronunciation in পার্তমেশ্রম্ম TSANG-P'ম- kä', Colloquial of Tsang.
হ	Ha-ra-tā-Hra	Hr	

§ 7.—The six consonants to which 5 Ha, in the form 5 (5.7598) Ha-ta), may be subjoined.

With the exception of \mathfrak{F} $L'\bar{a}$ (commonly seen $Lh\bar{a}$), which is frequently met with, these Ha-compounds are only used in transliterations from Sanskrit, Pāli, etc. The effect of subjoining \mathfrak{F} Ha, is to lengthen and slightly aspirate the consonant. Ex. \mathfrak{F} $L'\bar{a}$ -SA, $Lh\bar{a}sa$, the Capital of Tibet.

$$\overline{A}$$
 \overline{A} $\overline{A$

§ 8.—The six silent consonants to which A' La (A'7578' La-tā) is subjoined.

The effect of subjoining the A' is to raise and emphasize the tone, and to make the sound more compact.

귀 귀 곱 출 집 All pronounced A' La.
Pronounced Ďa.

EXAMPLES:—周气河飞 La'kor, Cipher, such as o, the abbreviated 歌 or 云; 周 Lu, Serpent-demon; 周河江 Lõé-Pa, To read; 周河泛江 Lǎć-Chor, or Läé-Chor, Clamour, noise, (Literary); 副弘江 Lěn-Pa, Stupid, foolish; 副河 Ďa-wa, Month, moon; 哥哥 La-Ma, Lama; 五 Lung, Wind; 劉河江 Lob-Pa, To learn, teach.

§ 9.—The sixteen consonants to which TEX Wa-zur. In the form of 4 is subjoined.

 \d is called WA-zur because it is a corner of the letter \d \d \d When scholars from Tibet first visited India to study Buddhistic

Cherry 1

Literature, they did not realize that the Tibetan letter \mathfrak{T} represented both B and W (which in Sanskrit are denoted by \mathfrak{T} and \mathfrak{T}), just as the Bengali letter \mathfrak{T} represents them, and that \mathfrak{T} Wa was therefore unnecessary. The later scholars, however, did realize it, and since then \mathfrak{T} Wa has not been much used in Tibetan. It still survives, however, in some words, and in the form of A WA-AUR, subjoined to the consonants now under notice.

As regards Tibetan words, the effect of subjoining \triangleleft is merely to lengthen somewhat the sound of the vowel inherent in, or qualifying, the consonant. In the following examples the vowel-sound is the inherent \square a, which, when lengthened, is \bar{a} . Thus:—

可· Kā, Oh!

गुःसें Ka-ye, Oh! Holla!

[5.5 K'A-TA, Crow, Magpie.

সুবা Dā-PA, Mouth.

קאָק' Lab-pā, School.

5.7. Ďā-wa, A Medical plant.

TSA, Spunk, tinder.

₹ Ťsā, Grass, herb.

万下 Tsā K'A, Pasture.

ద్ Ts'ā, Salt.

g or ஒத் ப்புக, or ப்புக-мо, Hat, cap.

∄ ŹĀ, Nettle.

₹ Rā, ₹ ₹ Rā-cho, Horn, sting.

T'AG-RA, or T'A'-RA, Hartshorn.

지 'La-wa, A species of deer.
의 Shā, Flood, high water.
의 지 Shā-wa, Deer.
의 지 Shā-p'o, Stag, buck.
의 지 Shā-mo, Doe, hind.

Wa-źur is also used to represent the sound of $w\bar{a}$, as found in old Tibetan literature, and in Sanskrit, Pāli, Chinese, and other ancient foreign languages. Ex:—

স্নাম Hwa, Sugared medicine like lozenges (old Tibetan).

ར་མོ་ཤ་ང་ Ra-me-shwā-Ra, Rameshwar, near Ceylon.

মূত্র-শূব্ T'o-u kwan, Last Emperor of China of the Tartar dynasty.

5ດິດສິງສະງັ້ວ Dwāi- ch'in-b'ā-dur, A Mongolian king of Tibet.

মুর্ম্বর Swa-B'a-t'an, Name of a town.

It also represents the sound of \hat{a} as found in modern Indian languages, e.g. Bengali, in which that sound and $w\bar{a}$ seem to be interchangeable. Ex. Swadesi, Shâdeshi.

WA-ŹUR also sometimes serves to show that a letter which might possibly be mistaken for a prefix is really an initial. Ex. 5 N N DANG-PO, Clear; 5 N N DA'-PO, A district in Tibet. If the WA-ŹUR had not been subjoined to the 5 in these words, one might have read them NGÄ-PO, and ĠÄ-PO.

§ 10.—The twelve consonants on which the silent T. Ra-go-Ra-Heda is placed. The effect is to raise the tonic-pitch and emphasize the sound of each consonant, except those that are regarded as masculine. As to masculine letters see § 19. Sign with Romanized equivalent, above.

It will be noticed that \mathfrak{P}^* Ka, \mathfrak{F}^* Ta, \mathfrak{F}^* Tsa, have not got above them the sign for heightening the Tonic-pitch, they being masculine letters and not requiring it.

§ 11.—The ten consonants on which the silent at a La-Go, La-Head, is placed. It has the same effect as the Ra-Head. Sign .

위
$$Ka$$
, 위 Ga , 위 Nga , 워 Cha , 임 Ja , 임 Ta , 임 Da ,

In all these the $\[\mathcal{A} \]$ is not pronounced, except in the case of $\[\mathcal{A} \]$ $L^*\bar{a}$, and except also when there is a preceding syllable which ends in a vowel. In this latter case the $\[\mathcal{A} \]$ is usually carried back and given the sound of $\[\mathcal{A} \]$ $\[\mathcal{A} \]$

§ 12.—The twelve consonants on which the silent No. Sa-Go, Sa-Head, is placed. It also has the same effect as the Ra-Head. Sign .

위 Ka, 위 Ga, 된 Nga, 왕 Nya, 왕 Ta. 된 Da, 왕 Na, 임 Pa, 임 Ba, 임 Ma, 왕 Tsa, 의 Dz a.

§ 13.— NGON-JU' NGA, THE FIVE PREFIXES, i.e. silent letters, which are prefixed to divers Initial (sometimes called Radical) letters, simple and complex, in the formation of words. Their effect is to remove the aspirate, if any, of low-toned, i.e. Feminine and Very Feminine initials, and to raise the Tonic Pitch, and make the sound more compact. Thus, take Jaung, the Perfect and Imperative root of AJAJUNG-WA, To happen, originate, arise. Here I is a feminine letter, and therefore low-toned, and, as an initial with ψ Ya-tā, it is slightly aspirated in Jaung-Wa, To happen, or inherent the addition of the prefix χ is a removes the aspirate, and makes the Tonic Pitch higher, and the sound more compact.

These prefixes are really a kind of Prepositive Affixes, sometimes modifying the meaning of a word, and sometimes entering into the formation of the Present, Perfect and Future Tenses of a verb. Though doubtless once upon a time actually pronounced, they are now generally silent. In the case, however, of \(\Pi\), \(\Pi\), and \(\Pi\), when the syllable in which any of them occurs is preceded by a syllable ending in a vowel-sound, the \(\Pi\), \(\Pi\), or \(\Pi\) is often carried back in pronunciation to the vowel-sound and sounded with it. The prefixes \(\Pi\ and \(\Pi\) are never sounded or carried back. As regards \(\Pi\) and \(\Pi\) the Colloquial has a curious custom of transmuting them into the sound of \(\Pi\). Ex. \(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\)\(\Pi\) MI-DU' is pronounced MIN-DU', Is not; \(\Pi\)\

No letters are ever superposed upon or subjoined to any prefix; and, as will be seen when we come to the paragraph on the Tone System (§ 19), Prefixes, as such, are of genders different

from those of the same letters as Initials, or even as Affixes, save in the case of 51' which is always Very Feminine.

- う Ďa. This prefix is of COMMON GENDER, and is met with before the following Initial letters, namely, 可 Ka, 可 Ĝa, 云 Nga, ス Pa, ス Ba, and 弘 Ma, and nine other letters which are merely compounds of these with Ya-tā', or Ra-tā'. It also enters into the formation of the Future Root of certain verbs. Ex. 5気心 ヴ, Future Root of スラスコ BÖ-WA, To offer; ラコス ĞAB, Future Root of スラスミン ĞEB-PA, To cover.
- 司 Ba: This prefix is of MASCULINE GENDER, and occurs before the Initials 可 Ka, 可 Ġa, ♂ Cha, 禹 Ja, ♂ Nya, ラ Ta, 与 Ďa, 与 Na, ズ Tsa, 禹 Dz'a, ⑤ Źhya, 禹 Ža, 禹 Ra, ♀ Sha, 禹 Sa, and twenty-nine other letters, compounds of the foregoing, some having one or other of the different subjuncts, and some even one or other of the three different superposed letters. It is a very common prefix, and enters into the formation of the Perfect and Future Tenses of many verbs. Ex. བསྡོང་ Kob, Perfect Root and Future Root of སྡོང་བ་ Kob-wa, To Surround; བསྲོང་བ་ Jö-wa, To milk.

- Ma. This prefix is of VERY FEMININE GENDER, and occurs before [F:Ka, F] Ga, G:Nga, G:Ch'a, E:Ja, F:Nya, F:Ta, f:Da, f:Na, f:Ts'a, f:Dz'a and four other letters, compounds of some of the foregoing in Ya- $t\bar{a}$, or Ra- $t\bar{a}$.
- A. This Prefix is of FEMININE GENDER, and is found before 「お K'a, 可 Ga, ま Ch'a, ま Ja, ヮ T'a, ヮ Ďa, ゼ P'a, ¬ Ba, ま Ts'a, É Dz'a, and nine other letters, compounds of some of the foregoing in Ya-tā, or Ra-tā.

The raising-power (if any) of these prefixes, as regards Tone, depends upon their gender as mentioned above, the masculine prefix ∇Ba possessing the greatest power.

§ 14.—The following Tabular Statement of the consonants (in their simple form) which, as Initial Radical letters, take prefixes, and of the particular prefix or prefixes which, and which alone, each such consonant takes, may be found of use, especially in cases where the student feels some difficulty in determining whether any particular letter is or is not a prefix. For instance, no letter except $\mathbf{5}$. $\mathbf{D}a$, or $\mathbf{7}$ $\mathbf{B}a$, immediately preceding a $\mathbf{7}$ $\mathbf{K}a$, can be a prefix; no letter except $\mathbf{5}$ $\mathbf{M}a$, or $\mathbf{7}$ \mathbf{A} , immediately preceding a $\mathbf{7}$ \mathbf{K} \mathbf{A} , can be a prefix; and so on.

Radical	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.
Щ	5	হৃশ্য সি Kar-po, White.

Initial or Radical letter.	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.
P	झ	महिन्द्र सं K'ān-po, Abbot.
	٩	ABATA K'yer-wa, or ABATA K'ur-wa, To carry away.
म	5	্বার্ম "G'ā-wa, Joy, Happiness.
	- ロー	নন্স্
	ম	মর্নি Ğo, Head.
	رر	੨ਗ੍ਰੇਕਾੜ <i>Ğyē-wa</i> , To fall, Stumble.
Ę	5	รุรูล Ngü, Money, Silver.
•	ह्य	뭐도독·취· <i>Ngar-mo</i> , Sweet.
4	피	ন্ট্ৰা'ম' Chog-pa, To break (Transitive).
	Q	নতুদাম Chug-pa, To allow.
a	ह्य	ਕੜੇ ਭੇਂ Ch'o-to, Beak.
	٩	নুক্র' Ch'am, Masquerade.
E	T T	ন্ট্রিন্ট্রি, Ži-ji', Glory, Splendour.
	51	ಸಾಮ್ Jä-wa, To meet.
	٩	ন্ট্ৰামান Jī-pa, To be afraid.
3	ন	ন্ট্রক্র Nyer-ts'ang, Pantry.
	7	ਸ੍ਵੇੱਕ'ਹ Nyē-wa, To ferment.
	ह्य	মন্ত্র মার্ মার্ শুল-ɛā'-pa, To rouse.

Initial or Radical letter.	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.
5	म	শ্যুকা Tam , Rumour.
	7	মূর্বিয়া Tön-pa, To cast out.
\$	হা	মহাবে T''ā, End.
	۹	ব্রুমান T'ung-wa, To drink.
5	ন	ন্দি: Dong, Face.
	7	স্ট্রি Ďe-po, Good, Well.
	ম	あちな。Ď'ā, Arrow.
	٩	৪্র্মান Ďam-pa, To choose.
4	শ্ৰ	মূর্বি-মে' শৃত'-pa, Injury.
	7	স্থান-wa, To lengthen, Extend.
	ম	মাধ্ব সঁ'ā, Oath.
7	5	รุงเรา Pang-po, Witness.
ধ	ď	র্থম'ন' P'ই-wa, To increase.
7	5	বুনাঝ Ü, Breath; বুরুনা Yar-ka, Summer.
	ه	ব্সম্স Bar-wa, To blaze up.
ষ	5	স্মশ্-মি' <i>Mag-mi</i> , Soldier.
ર્સ	मा	স্র্তি Tsang-po, River.
	7	วรัส เครา Tsön-K'ang, Prison, Jail.
		·

Initial or Radical letter.	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.
క	ম	मर्जें $Ts^{\epsilon}o$, Lake.
	٩	বুর্ন্নাম Ts'ig'-pa, To burn (Intransitive).
. É	Q	স্টুর Ďzün, Lie, Falsehood.
	ह्य	মই্মাইন Ďzē-po, Lovely.
	વ	جَيِّدَ عَنْ Dzing-ra, Fortification.
77	None.	
ৰ	ন	স্পৃত্য' Źňyān-pa (pro. Źňyām-pa), Another.
	7	ব্ৰম্পূৰ্ব Nang-z'hyin, According to.
я	ন্	নাৰুনাম'ম' দূঁন-po, Body.
	7	ਹੜੇ ਹਕ੍ਰਾ Z'ob-ta, Likeness.
a	None.	
W	ম্	মা্মানা Ÿa', or Ÿaġ, Bull, Yak.
Ξ.	Q	স্কু:পৃ· Ľa-sha, Thigh.
ત્ય	None.	
.9	ন	নাঐনাঐনেহেনে She-she tang-wa. To rebuke.
	- 27	বিপ্র'-pa, To tell.

	Prefix or Prefixes taken.	Example.
N	म प	ন্ধন:মূঁ: Sā-po, Bright, Clear. বর্জিন্মন্নিমার্মি: Sō'-de kam-po, Misfortune.
57 184	None.	

NOTES.

- 2.—In the case of a two-letter syllable, whenever the second letter is qualified by a vowel-sign, or is otherwise complex, the first letter, if one of the five mentioned in § 13, may be taken to be a Prefix.

Ex. – राईं Ts'o, A lake; न्या री न्या प्राप्त प्राप्त प्राप्त Calamity.

- 3.—In the case of a two-letter syllable in which both letters are simple letters, then, even if the first letter is one of the five mentioned in § 13, it is not a Prefix, but an Initial or Radical. Ex.— 기기기기 BA'-GA', Cake of tea; 기기기기 BAB-YONG-WA, To descend.
- 4.—In the case of a syllable consisting of more than two letters, the first, if one of the five mentioned in § 13, may be taken to be a Prefix. This is so whether the next letter is or is not simple.

EX. AAN'AI (the Literary form of AN'AIN'A) BAB-PA, To descend; AIRA'AI K'AN-PO, Abbot; AIRA'AI KÖ'PA, To create. Very rarely it is otherwise, as in the case of the 5 in the word ANALY RI-DA, Wild animal. Such words are often written with a wa-zur under the 5, to show that it is not a Prefix, but an Initial. Thus ANALY It is then still pronounced RI-DA.

5.—Should the Prefix be \mathfrak{J} , and the Initial be simple \mathfrak{J} , then \mathfrak{J} loses its b sound, and is pronounced w, or w as modified by the next letter, if any, such as \mathfrak{J} Na, \mathfrak{A} La, or \mathfrak{J} Sa (see Vowel Modifications, § 3). Should, however, the \mathfrak{J} be accompanied by \mathfrak{J} (ya-tā), or any vowel-sign, it similarly loses its w sound, and takes that of the ya-tā or of the vowel-sign. Ex.— $\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{L}$ Not Bang, but Wang, Authority, Power; $\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{A}$ $W\mathfrak{J}$, Pinnacle, Spire; $\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{L}$ YAR, Summer: $\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{J}\mathfrak{L}$ YAR YAR

§ 15.—Peculiarities of Pronunciation.

1.—When a syllable beginning with one of the Prefixes \P , \P , or \P , follows another syllable ending in a vowel-sound, the Prefix is often in the Colloquial carried back, sometimes with its own sound, sometimes with a changed sound, to the preceding syllable, and pronounced as if it were part of it. Ex.—

รฐาริจา Chu-chi', pronounced Chué-chi', Eleven. รฐารติ Chu-źหัช1, pronounced Chub-źหัช1, Fourteen.

ম্মার Ra-z'ı, pronounced Rab-z'ı, Drunk.

স্পান্ত্র পার্ক প্রাক্তির (Hon.) K'ā-kyön-ňang-wa, pronounced K'āb-kyön-ňang-nga, To censure.

বৃ'বারব্' (Hon.) NA-হ'র, pronounced NAM-হ'র, Clock, Clothes.

মেন্দ্র K'A-CH'U, pronounced K'AM-CH'U, Law suit.

খেনির্বার্থী Ya-Ts'än-po, pronounced Yam-Ts'äm-po. Astonishing.

2.—The Prefixes $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ and $\mathbf{6}^{\bullet}$ are never themselves carried back; but in the case of $\mathbf{6}^{\bullet}$ and also of $\mathbf{5}^{\bullet}$ the sound of n is sometimes substituted, and pronounced with the preceding syllable. Ex.—

মার্থির্বির্দি T'o-চö', pronounced T'ön-চö', Ambition.

ই'বিবুশি Mi-চ্ড', pronounced Min-চ্ড', Is not, are not.

্বান্ত্র (Hon.) ĞE-চঁগ্ম, pronounced Ğèn-চঁগ্ম, Clergy.

জ্মান্স্রমা (Hon.) Źнүй-рам, pronounced Źнүйх-рам, Cheek.

র্বির্বির্মুর্ব্রে Nön-be ṭā'-pa, pronounced Nöm-be ṭā'-pa,
To add.

রীষ্ট্রে Me-চ'র, pronounced Men-চ'র, Gun.

মীম্মা Me-চ্ন', pronounced Mèn-চ্ন', Ember.

3.—Even when the first syllable ends in \P , the same custom sometimes holds, probably because of the incomplete way in which final \P is uttered, the syllable therefore seeming to end in a vowel-sound. Ex.—

সুন্ম্র্র্ (Hon.) Ch'Ać-চঁti', or Ch'A'-চঁti', pronounced Ch'Än-চঁti', Knot.

ত্মব্বা Yin-pa, pronounced Yim-pa, To be (copula).

র্বিন্মুন্ম Nön-BE та'-PA, pronounced Nöm-BE та'-PA,

To add.

স্ত্র্ম Zhyän-pa, pronounced Zhyäm-pa, Other.

• changed into that of m. Ex.—

মানুমান্তনা (Hon.) Ğü-ch'am, pronounced Ğun-ch'am, Catarrh.

ন্ত্রীমার্কর উপ্র-Ts'an, pronounced উপ্রম-Ts'an, Banner of Victory.

6.—The sounds that are latent in superadded letters, sometimes result in audible sounds, pronounced with the preceding syllable. Ex.—

নাম্নার্ট্র (Hon.) Sö-bong, pronounced Sön-bong, Churn.

E'AL' J'A-DONG, pronounced J'AN-DONG, Tea churn.

ਸਤੌਂ ਦੂ' Ch'o-ਲੱga, pronounced Ch'ö-ਲੱga, Fifteen.

सर्केर् देन Ch'ö'-ten, pronounced Ch'ör-ten, A monument containing the ashes of a saint or other relics.

इरिन्त Ser-ka, pronounced Se-ka, Chink.

WT'W YAR-LA, pronounced W'A' YA-LA, Above.

קָּאָבְיֹבְי (ק') Mar-hrang-wa, pronounced Ma-hrang-nga, Naked.

קא" Bar-la, pronounced Ba-la, Between.

৪্না 'Ur-pa, pronounced U-pa, Noise.

รุกุราพิล Kar-yö, pronounced Ka-yö, Earthen mug or cup.

Fr. TSAR, pronounced TSA, Margin

শৃহাই Ser, pronounced Se, Gold.

AFT. K'AR-NGA, pronounced K'A-NGA, Gong.

নাম্ন্ Sar-Pa, pronounced Sa-Pa, New.

- 8.—When the first of two syllables ends in a vowel-sound, and the next syllable consists of ∇wa , the latter often takes the sound of a. Ex.—

 § ∇wa , pronounced Chu-A, Dung of cattle.
- 9.—The following is a common case of ∇ wa, or ∇ pa, being reduced to the sound of a:—

ফ্রিন্সান্ত্র Yö'-wa-rè pronounced Yaw-a-rè'. Is, are, was, were (in the sense of possibly or probably being).

10.—When the first of two syllables ends in \mathfrak{A} , and the next syllable is \mathfrak{A} wa, the latter is often pronounced as \mathfrak{A} ra, but sometimes it is reduced to a mere a. Ex.—

মাহমে'ব'নাব্র'ন (Hon.) Jä-wa nang-wa, pronounced Jä-ra nang-nga, To meet.

พี่ผฺาว Yö-wa, pronounced Yöl-A, Curtain.

11.—The above are samples of irregularities with which one sometimes meets; practice alone will enable the student to know when other words similarly spelt follow these Colloquial customs, and when they ought to be pronounced according to the regular rules. The following are a few more specimens of irregular pronunciations:—

ম'র্ম' Ma-nyong, pronounced Ma-nyung, Never.

মুখ'নীম'ট্র ব্লুল' Sö shë kyi bu', pronounced Sö shin-ci bu', Who knows?

[마디티 디디디 K'A LÄ SHÄ'-PA pronounced K'AB-LÄ SHÄ'-PA,

To chat.

ਵੇਸ਼ (Hon.) P'EB-PA, pronounced P'E-PA, To arrive, depart, come, go.

মনুসামান্ত্রীমান্ত্রামান্তর Zhyu-Bö, pronounced Zhyum-Bö, Mattress.

নুমন্মন (Hon.) Źнүন-ва', pronounced Źнүйм-ва', Mask.

ਬੁੱਕੇ ਪੰ L'a-ਸ਼-PA, pronounced L'ab-RI-PA, Painter.

ই্রিমেন Mön-Lam, pronounced Mö-Lam, Prayer.

মুবম্মন্ত Kyab-gön, pronounced Kyam-gön, Helper, Protector, Saviour.

§ 16.—The ten Consonantal Affixes, called ইমান্চ্নামন্ত Je-স্ত' chu, each of which, when following an Initial, simple or complex, completes the formation of a syllable.

Of these \P , Γ , Π , and Π are frequently seen with an additional silent Π , or Second Affix, called $\Pi \Gamma \Pi \Pi$ Yang-Ju'. They are then called Double Affixes.

Another kind of Double Affixes is met with in old Tibetan books. It is very rare, but for Literary purposes the student may as well make a note of it. It consists of 5° Na, 5° Ra, or 1° La, followed by 5° Da, here called 5° 5° 1° DA-DA, A and D. Thus:—

It is used to express the Past Tense. Ex:-

ๆฟจุรีนี Sänd-Pa, He heard.

ব্যুন্দ্র Gyurp-pa, He became.

স্মাম্ব্র Söld-Pa, He requested.

The modern Literary practice, however, is to omit the final 5, which may be regarded as obsolete.

The DICTIONARY ORDER of the above-mentioned ten Consonantal Finals, and of the four Double Finals in N, is as follows:—

1.	न्।		ģa.	8.	고刻.		ĥа-sа.
2.	নাহা.		ģa-sa.	9.	श.	••	ma.
3.	۲.	••	nga.	10.	প্রথ.	• •	ma-sa
4.	다회.	• •	nga-s a .	11.	ς.	• •	' a.
5.	5	• •	₫a.	12.	۲.	••	ra.
6.	ৰ্	. •	na.	13.	ଧ .	••	la.
7.	٦.		$\acute{b}a$.	14.	₹ 1 .	• •	sa.

The above, of course, is their order under each letter of the TT KA-K'A; that is to say, it is their order after, or in subordination to, the Alphabetical Order, if that term may be used in connection with the TT

As to the Gender of the Ten Final Affixes, see § 19.

 $\widetilde{\widetilde{A}}$ \widetilde{G} \widetilde{G} $\widetilde{\widetilde{G}}$ $\widetilde{\widetilde{G}}$

EXAMPLES:-

,1.—शुक्षाणुदाविदायायमायास्रारेवाची।

Sü-kyang k'ong-la lag-pa ma re'go: And no man laid hands on him.

In the Colloquial this would be:— शुक्षाप्यदास्त्रियायमायामायानमामा (for चल्माया) देद or चल्माकाश्वरा

Sử yang k'o-la lag-pa ma źhyagga (for źhyag-pa) rè' or źhyagma song.

².—พ<u>ื่</u>หาผาสาสูณานักราล**ร**าสูนานัก

In the Colloquial this might be:— ਘੇ-ਪ੍ਰਕੇ-ਸ਼ੁ-ਜ਼ੁਕ-ਪੇ-੨-ਕੇ੨-ਘੇਰ। or:—

८०.प्राण्डेश.मु.य.त्र.५.५५.पश्चेर.श्र.।

=Jesse begat David the king.

Yi-shāi bu ğyā-po Da-wid yin:
Jesse's son was King David.

Yi-shā-yi bu ğyä-po Da-wid j'ungngo: Jesse's son was king David

 $Yi\text{-}sh\bar{a}\text{-}y\bar{\imath}$ $\ddot{g}y\ddot{a}\text{-}po$ $\acute{D}a\text{-}wi\acute{d}$ $ky\grave{e}'\text{-}song:$ Jesse begat King David.

3.—हिं**र** र्कें दे क्ट कर श्रेमा सेर रें।

Colloquially :— મુંદ્ર-સ્દર્જે વૈ: ત્રદ'ભ સુંગ' એદ્ર | K'yō'-ts'ōi nang-na ṭo' mè'-do : Ye have not life in yourselves.

 $K`y\ddot{o}\text{'-}rang\text{-}ts`\ddot{o}i\ nang\text{-}la\ \ to\text{'}\ m\grave{e}\text{'}.$

4.—हिंद्र'णुं: युःमाश्रॅब'र्वे।

Colloquially :— ब्रिन्स्रेन्स्याम्बर्सन्तुम्। K'yō' kyi bu son-no: Thy son liveth.

K'yō' rei bu sōn-gyi du'.

5.—८मा ७ स्प्रिं शासिमध्रीय शेषुव वे ।

Nga ġa-ru yö'-sa la leb mi t'ub-bo: Where I am, ye cannot come. Colloquially: ---

ट.चो.च.जूर.श्र.ज.जूट.बैव.मी.श्रथ. or जूट.श्र.बंच।

Nga ģa--pa yō'-sa la yong t'ub-kyi män, or yong mi t'ub.

Yang ngữ đe t'a-mai nyin par lang-war j'a-o: And I will raise him up at the last day.

Colloquially :— অচ্চেম্ব্রিসমান্ত্রনার্ক্রমান্ত্র

त्तिम,लूट.। लट.टश.ट्र.ॐ.श.चार्बेचा.पुराजालट. Yang ngà đe nyi-ma žhyug-shō la yar kya' yong.

7. — नृत्तिं स्थळेंना मी मुनाश तिर्मि न ने तु है । नाम स्था समाति मुनाश तिर्मि न ते नुहार समाति मुनाश ति मुनाश तिर्मि न ने स्था Kön-ch'o' gi t'ū'-t'o-wa de la nāpar gyur-ro: The wrath of God will abide on him.

Colloquially :— नुगोंन सर्केमा मी नगान कर रे प्राप्त (or मिंभ) ॲंट मी रेर्।

Kön-ch'o' gi k'ā-ch'ā' de la (or k'o la) yong-gi-rè'.

भाषाद्याः म्याप्तः म्याप्तः स्थाप्तः स्थापतः स्यापतः स्थापतः स्थापतः स्थापतः स्थापतः स्यापतः स्थापतः स्थापतः स्यापतः स्थापतः स्थापतः स्थापतः स्यापतः स्यापतः स्यापतः स्यापतः स्य

Yang k'ong ģī nga-la kön-ch'o' la nyèn-kur j'ö shi' chē sung-so: Then said he unto me, worship God.

Colloquially:—

रेक्शमिरेशप्ताप्तान्तान्ताः क्रिंक्यसम्बद्धाः क्रिंक्यसम्बद्धाः क्रिंक्यसम्बद्धाः क्रिंक्यसम्बद्धाः

Ďe-nä k'o-rē nga la kön**-**ch'o' la mō-lam t'ob dag-ga-rang labj'ung.

De na nam-k' a na ta zhyan zhyi t'ong-war gyur-to: And there was seen another sign in heaven. Colloquially:-

न् नुस्रानुस्रास्त्रास्त्रास्त्रास्त्रास्त्रास्त्रास्त्रात्र्यः मानुन् Éhyäm-pa chi' t'ong j'ung.

 $N.B.-\widetilde{5}$ is used only with the Literary Perfect root after final x, x, y (for x, y, y)

The Full stop |, or ||, will henceforth be omitted. See Writing AND PUNCTUATION, § 20.

§ 18.—Colloquial Duplications.

Other Examples are:—

ম্মামে (for ম') মার্মাম (Hon.) Se-la (for wa) nang-wa, or nang-nga: To absolve.

মুনার্নামানুমামামামা (for মা) নার্মা (for মা) মার্মা (Hon.)
Kushō kyi sē-la (for wa) nang-nga (for wa) yin; the
master absolved or has absolved.

- নার্ড বিষ্কাম্মমামা (for মা) স্বামাম্বা (Vulg.) Tso-wö sä-la (for wa) nang-nga (for wa) yin; The lord absolved or has absolved.
- র্মাম (for মা) প্রামাম (Hon.) Nor-ra (for wa) Nang-nga,
 To err.
- भु नार्वेन्श गुँश वेंद्र द (for न) नार्द्र द (for न) धेर (Hon.)

 Kushō kyi nor ra (for wa) nang-nga (for wa) yin : or
 still better :—
- भू नावेंगाश गुराश देर नावदः (for न') or प्रनाश देर प्रेर र (for न') प्रेर Ku-źhyō-kyi t'u nor nang-nga (for wa), or t'u nor shor-ra (for wa) yin, The master erred, or has erred.
- 디 erred, I have erred.
- To shun, To renounce.
- শ্রিম্প্রিমি (for ম') স্ক্রেমে (for ম') ইচ (Hon.) K'ongśi pong-nga (for wa) nang-nga (for pa) Rè': He shunned, He has shunned.
- [취로시발도시다 (for 되) 국 (Vulg.) K'o-RE PANG-NGA (for PA) RE': He shunned, He has shunned.

When the root ends in final \mathbb{A}^* , the Colloquial sometimes resorts to a following \mathbb{A}^* , instead of the Duplication as above. Ex.—

মুন্ন'ন' ĞYE-WA, To stumble.

- ম্ব্রীমেম (for ম') মার্মেম (Hon.) ĞYE-RA (for WA) NANG-NGA:
 To stumble.
- RA (for WA) NANG-NGA (for PA) YIN: He stumbled, He has stumbled.

At the same time this were better phrased thus:-

다 귀시도 (for 기) 다 시 (Vulg.) NGA GYE-RA (for WA) YIN:

I stumbled, I have stumbled.

As regards verbs the roots of which end in 5, or 5, or 5, or 5, there is no such duplicating eustom. They are pronounced in the regular way.

See also § 15, 8, as to $\mathbf{\nabla}$ wa changing into a after a vowel-sound.

§ 19.—THE TONE SYSTEM.

Tone is a very important factor, a fairly correct tone being almost more desirable than absolutely correct grammar; and there exist certain rules on the subject which should be carefully studied.

The TA KA-LI, or Consonantal Series of the TA KA-K'A, is classified by Tibetan Grammarians under six heads, having reference to the respective Genders of the several letters.

These heads are:—

- 1. Fro, Masculine.
- 2. A'A'T MA-NING, Common.
- 3. No, Feminine.
- 4. विद्रार्टिं Shin-tu mo, Very Feminine.
- 5. ই বিপ্রম Mo-Sham, Sub-Feminine, or Barren
- 6. కృడ్రాష్ Ts'an me', Neuter.

MASCULINE LETTERS.

These are pronounced with a special emphasis, fullness, compactness, and distinctness, arising from a powerful use of the vocal organs. They never undergo any modifications in this respect, even when

guarded by Prefixes or Super-posed Letters, but always preserve intact their own natural sounds.

FEMININE AND VERY FEMININE LETTERS.

In pronouncing these the vocal organs are relaxed, and the phonetic body of the letter is not so much sent forth from the mouth, as suffered to emanate from it gently and gradually. These letters are subject to phonetic modification when guarded. For instance, the addition of Prefixed or Super-posed Letters has the effect of raising the Tonic Pitch, and softening the sound. Thus, $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Gang, is unguarded, and therefore, to an English ear, sounds very like Kang. But $\neg \neg \neg \neg$ Gang, similarly pronounced like the Ga in Garland, and $\neg \neg \neg$ Gang, similarly pronounced, are guarded, in the first case by a Prefix, and in the second by a Super-posed Letter, and therefore the sound is no longer hard and compact like the k sound of unguarded $\neg \neg \neg$, but softer and exactly like the sound of the English hard g, and the tone is moreover raised, or brought to the Pitch-level of a Masculine Letter.

COMMON LETTERS.

The manner of pronouncing these differs only in degree from the way in which Masculine and Feminine Letters are pronounced. That is, they are uttered less compactly and emphatically than the Masculine, and less softly than the Feminine Letters.

SUB-FEMININE OR BARREN LETTERS.

The pronunciation of these is also only a matter of degree as compared with the pronunciation of Feminine Letters.

NEUTER LETTER.

This has a hard and compact sound.

The following Tabular Statement will elucidate the above remarks:—

I	etter.	Gende	r.	Pronunciation.
η.	Ka			
₹.	Cha			
5	Ta	Masculine		With distinctness, emphasis, fullness
۲۱.	Pa			and compactness, effected by a special effort of the vocal
₹.	Tsa	j !		organs.
la.	K'a			
₽.	Chʻa			
হা.	T'a	neue .		
শ্ৰ	P'a	Common		Not so compactly as the Masculine, and not so softly as the Femi-
ಕ್.	Ts'a			nine Letters.
(4.	Sha			
₹ ≱1.	Sa	j		
ন্য	Ġа	7		
Ĕ.	$_{ m Ja}$			
5	Ďа			
۵.	B'a			
Ę.	Dz'a	Feminine	• •	A gentle and gradual emanation of the sound, rather than an em-
G.	Wa			phatic and compact projection of it.
ଵ୍'	Źhya			
≅.	Żа			
M.	Ya			

L	${ m etter.}$	Gender.	Pronunciation.
5° 5° 5° 5°	Nga Nya Na Na	Very Feminine.	More gently and gradually than the Feminine.
۲° ۲°	Ra La		
5. - €.	На	Sub-Feminine or Barren	Without effort.
₩.	A .	Neuter	Hard, from the base of the throat.

Even the Five Prefixes possess a gender of their own. Thus:— \mathbf{z} · $\mathbf{B}a$ is Masculine, having been Feminine, as an Initial.

$$\vec{\nabla} \cdot \vec{G}a$$
 are $Common$, having been $Feminine$, as Initials.

A' 'A is Feminine, having been Barren, as an Initial.

Ma is Very Feminine, unaltered.

So, too, the Ten Final Affixes have the following genders:-

স্ *Ġa*, *Masculine*, having been *Feminine* as an Initial, and *Common* as a Prefix.

 5° Da, Ditto.

 \mathfrak{A}^* $\acute{B}a$, Ditto, having been Feminine as an Initial, and Masculine as a Prefix.

Nº Sa, Masculine, having been Common as an Initial.

5 Na, Common, having been Very Feminine as an Initial.

(Nga) Feminine, having been Very Feminine as Initials, and (Na) Ma having been Very Feminine, as a Prefix.

A, Feminine, having been Barren as an Initial, and Feminine as a Prefix.

Thus, the only Letter which undergoes no change in gender, whether as Initial, Prefix, or Final Affix, is \aleph Ma.

In his Primer of Standard Tibetan the Revd. Mr. Edward Amundsen, when dealing with the Tone system, gives prominence to the *Pitch* and *Length*, rather than to the *Compactness*, *Emphasis*, and *Distinctness* of the tone. His classification may be represented thus:—

ा. णा उर ५: दा ५:	High and short.
2. ₹ .q. ≰.	High and long.
3. Pr & 퇴 작 &	Medium and short.
4. E. 3. 4. M. H. Z. A. M.	Medium and long.
5. ਸ੍ਰਾ E' ਨ੍ਰਾ ਸ਼ਾ ਵੀ ਉ' ਸ਼ਾ ਕ੍ਰਾ ਆ	Expression of the Exercises of the Exercises Exercises Exercise Exercises Ex
6. A.	Very low and long.

We have seen that the Length or Shortness of the Tone is governed by rules of its own (see § 3): hence we need not consider it here in connection with Pitch. So far, therefore, as Pitch alone is concerned, Mr. Amundsen's system may be reduced to only three classifications, namely:—

1.	High		$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1.\\ 2. \end{array} \right.$	High and short. High and long.
2.	Medium	consisting of Mr. A.'s	$\left\{\begin{matrix} 3.\\ 4. \end{matrix}\right.$	Medium and short. Medium and long.
3.	Low		$\left\{\begin{array}{l} 5.\\ 6. \end{array}\right.$	Low and ascending. Very low.

Now, if, instead of regarding this question of Tone from the point of view of Pitch, we regard it from that of emphasis, fullness, compactness and distinctness, we shall find that the subject again arranges itself under three heads namely, utterances that are very compact and full, those that are only moderately so, and those that are soft and gradual emanations.

It would appear, however, to be doubtful whether Prefixes have much to do with the raising of the Tonic Pitch. What is more certain is that they are used (1) for modifying the meaning of a word, e.g., \$\overline{5}5'\overline{5}'\overline{

To honour; TEA Dong-wa (for JEA DANG-wa, Cold), but ম্মুন্ম Dong-wa, To count, and ম্মুন্ম Dong-wa, To die; (2) in the formation of the tenses of verbs, as already explained (§ 13); and (3) to effect changes in the pronunciation of Initial Letters. Thus T, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like K in English; but, when prefixed by 5', 5', or 6', it is pronounced like hard 6' in English. Again 5', as an Initial, is pronounced almost like P in English; but when prefixed by 5, it is pronounced as W, when unqualified by any vowel-sound, and as the vowel-sound only, when so qualified; or, if prefixed by 3, it takes the sound of B in English. Again, as regards 5, see § 13. Again, $\mathbf{5}$, as an Initial, is pronounced as a dental T; but, if prefixed by \P , \P , or \P , it takes the sound of a dental D. Again, \P and £, when Initials, are pronounced with a slight aspirate; but, when prefixed by \\mathbb{I}, \\mathbb{I}, \\ \text{or } \\mathbb{I}, \\ \text{they lose the aspirate. Again }\mathbb{I}, \\ \text{as} an Initial, is pronounced almost like S in English; but, when prefixed by $\neg \gamma$ or $\neg \gamma$, it is pronounced like Z in English. Lastly, $\neg \gamma$, as an Initial, is pronounced almost like shya; but, prefixed by \P' or \P' , it takes the sound of zhya.

§ 20.—Writing and Punctuation.

Originally, Tibetan was a monosyllabic language. Nowadays, however, its words are mostly dissyllabic. There is no attempt in the written or printed language to divide off words from one another, either by spacing or by punctuation. Hence, they all succeed and seem to run into each other in one continuous line, and the reader's knowledge is all that enables him to recognize them individually. It is otherwise, however, with syllables. A syllable may consist of a single consonant, simple or complex, or of two or more such consonants, silent or pronounced. But, be its consonantal structure what it may, the whole collocation of letters possesses only one vowel-sound, inherent or expressed by vowel-signs. Every such collocation or syllable must be marked off

from its successor by a dot (') placed at the right-hand top corner of the final consonant. This dot is called 37 Ts'E'. To mark the termination of clauses such as those for which we generally use a comma, a semi-colon, or a colon, another sign is used in the shape of a vertical stroke (), called JTS-95 KYANG-SHA'. Whenever this sign is used, the ET after the last consonant is omitted, except in the case of final ranga, which always retains it. A double vertical stroke (||), called ችኝነገብኝ Nyi-Shä', is used where we would use a full stop. At the end of a paragraph, or of a chapter, a fourfold vertical stroke (IIII), קֹבְיּלְקָּלְי Z̄HYI-SHX', is placed. Instead of the four plain strokes the Instead of the two plain strokes the following, y j. Instead of the one plain stroke the following, . In some books the comma is seen thus, \(\frac{1}{2} \). Sometimes the dot (') or $\widetilde{5}$ 7 is seen \(\frac{1}{2} \), and sometimes even larger, 6. In Book-letter and in Running-hand the FT is seen thus, c.

At the commencement of printed and written matter symbols like the following may often be seen:—

This is called Swasti or the Auspicious Benediction. It may begin any work dealing with Ethics and Morality. The top figures are the Double Flame, or Radiance, the next are the Double Gem, and the lowest are the Double Lotus. On the right is \$8.95

TRIPLE DITTO, for writings on Philosophy and Theology.

RADIANCE, GEM, TRIPLE LOTUS, and STALK. Beginning chapters in Religious works.

Lotus and Stalk. Used with official correspondence, proverbs, maxims, etc., to indicate a fresh beginning.

ORDINARY BLOCK PRINT.

The proper method of writing this is first to make the thick horizontal stroke at the top of each letter, and then the rest of the character, working from left to right as in English, and adding the Ya-tas, Ra-tas, and vowel-signs last. The straight vertical strokes should be long, fairly thick at the top, and tapering to the bottom.

In writing \mathfrak{F} , the vertical stroke on the left may first be made downwards, and then the rest, never omitting clearly to define the loop in the centre. Or, a horizontal stroke may first be made, then the vertical stroke on the left downwards, and then the remainder, from the right-hand end of the horizontal stroke. The down-stroke from the loop must be long, quite vertical, and tapering, otherwise the beginner is apt to produce something which might be mistaken for \mathfrak{F} , which has no central loop, and whose final down-stroke is short, and instead of being vertical slopes off to the right.

Other letters which the beginner is apt to mix up with each other when attempting to write them, are \Box Nga, \Box Ta, and \Box Da. The down-strokes in nga and da begin at or near the right end of the horizontal line, and curve well to the left, whereas the down-stroke of Ta begins at the left end of the horizontal line, and comes straight down, or even with a slight slant to the right. The final stroke of nga is short and thick, while those of Ta and Da are long and tapering. Ta's final down-stroke, moreover, takes a bend to the left, while that of Da bears well to the right. Both, too, are brought well down, whereas Nga's final stroke is stunted.

In writing \P the little stroke on the left should first be made, then the thin stroke next to it, then the top horizontal stroke and undercircle, and finally the long vertical down-stroke.

The whole left side of the letter, and finally the vertical down-stroke on the right. Or, after the horizontal stroke, first the little curved stroke in the top left-hand corner, then a straight diagonal line from

6

right to left downwards, and finally the vertical stroke on the right downwards.

In writing letters like 5 and 5, the down-stroke containing the loop is usually commenced from near the right-hand end of the horizontal stroke.

The vertical stroke of 5 should project down slightly beyond the point of junction with the curve on the right.

- First the horizontal, then the thin curving down-stroke, beginning it from the centre of the horizontal, and lastly the thick curving stroke on the right, the top end of which should meet the thin down-stroke a little below the letter's junction with the horizontal. Or thus, \mathcal{E} , that is, first the horizontal stroke, then the short down stroke, and lastly the curving stroke, somewhat after the way we write the figure five.
- & First the horizontal, next from the centre of that stroke the down-stroke, then the loop on the left, working upwards, and then by carrying on the pen, the loop on the right working downwards.
- A' First make an A' That is to say, a vertical down-stroke, then the rest of the figure. Lastly make a straight down-stroke, meeting the end of A' A' has no loop.
- First the dot, or thick short stroke on the left at the top, then the half circle to the right, then the thick short stroke slanting from left to right, and finally the long hook. Or else, first a horizontal stroke, then the dot or short thick stroke on the left at the top, and then the rest as stated.
- First the horizontal, then from its centre or from near its right-hand end the short thin lines loping downward to the left, then the hook with the tail brought up level with but clear of the horizontal stroke; next, from near the top of the second stroke a straight or curving line downwards with a slant to the right; and lastly the vertical down-stroke.

.)

W First a short horizontal, then a sort of U with another horizontal over the right-hand limb, then the stroke slanting to the right, and finally the vertical down-stroke. Or, first two parallel vertical strokes of equal length, with a horizontal on each, then another parallel vertical stroke a little longer than the others. Then join the first two with an under-curved stroke; and lastly, with a slanting stroke from left to right, join the second and third vertical strokes, at the bottom. The first way is the better.

H. First write an elongated A, thus A, and then add the bar across the middle.

Or first write an ordinary A, and then subjoin a A without its horizontal stroke.—Thus A

Si First a short horizontal, then the thin short down-stroke, slanting to the left, then the thick stroke up the end of it, slanting to the right. Then, from near the top of the second stroke, make the long down-stroke, sloping to the right, and lastly the vertical down-stroke.

First a horizontal, then the short thin down-stroke from near the right-hand end of the horizontal, and slanting to the left, then the thick stroke at the bottom, beginning it from well to the left of the down-stroke and carrying it boldly across the end of the latter, with a good sweep to the right and with a downward trend.

In making \mathfrak{I}^* the beginner should see that he does not make it look like \mathfrak{I}^*

Then from near the left-hand end a thin downward stroke slanting to the left, then a thick downward-stroke slanting to the right, and finally the vertical down-stroke, commencing it from the right-hand end of the horizontal.

There is a fairly long horizontal. Then to the first half of it

6

subjoin a small 4" without its horizontal. Then, from the right-hand end of the horizontal, make the long vertical down-stroke.

This is the same as 可 reversed.

TFirst the horizontal. Then the two little strokes, and finally the long vertical down-stroke.

BOOK-LETTER and RUNNING-HAND.

These are very much alike, the Running Hand, however, being the more difficult of the two to read and write. Specimens of both, in all possible combinations, are given in Csoma de Körös's Grammar (1834).

§ 21.—Spelling.

Tibetan spelling may be described as a cumulative process, one only of the component parts of a syllable being taken up at a time. Next, the sound so taken up is repeated, but with the addition in advance, or by way of assumption, of the second component part. Then this second component part is pronounced by itself. Finally, the phonetic effect of all that has thus been taken up is pronounced together, and that effect represents the literal expression of the syllable.

A knowledge of how to spell is most useful, and it is quite worth the student's while to take the trouble to acquire it.

The following examples are intended to exhibit the process progressively, through most of the stages from simple to complex syllables:—

I.—Simple Consonants.

T (for example), and one final affix.

गमा Ka, Kag-ga, Ka'.

¬¬¬ Ka, Kang-nga, Kang.

775. Ka, Kä'-da, *Kä*'.

ηξ Ka, Kän-na, Kän.

¬¬¬¬ Ка, Ка-la, Ка.

ТЫ Ka, Kä-sa, Kä.

II.—Consonant and Double Affix.

ন্ম ' Ga, Gang-nga-sa, Gang.

ፑንኤኒ K'a, K'am-ma-sa, K'am.

ក្នុង K'a, K'am-ma (Lä'-kor)-sa, K'am.

III.—Consonant with Prefix and Affix.

ዃጣጓ Ďa-wo: Ka, K'ā-'ā, K'ā.

মান্ত্র Ma-wo: K'a, K''ā-'a, K''ā.

IV.—Consonant and Single Vowel-sign.

भैं Ka, ģi-ģu, Ki.

η Ka, źhyab-kyu, Ku.

ग्रे Ka, deng-bu, Ke.

Ka, na-ro, Ko.

V.—Consonant with double Vowel-sign and Subjunct.

র্বী Ga, na-ro, go; 'ā, na-ro, oû; Goû.

VI.—Consonant with Vowel-sign and Affix.

ΜΣ' Ka, na-ro, ko; kong, nga, Kong.

रेंद्र' Ra, deng-bu, re; rè'-da, Rè'.

VII.—Consonant with Vowel-sign and Double Affix.

সূত্রীয়া K'a, na-ro, K'o; k'om, ma, sa, K'om.

VIII.—Reversed Letters.

ቸ Ta-log-Ta; Tam-ma (Lä'-kor) Tam; k'a; Tam-k'a.

ፖ러ቲ Ďa-loģ-Da; ma; Ra, źhyab-kyu, Ru; Da-ma-ru.

IX.—Ya-tās.

Ŋ' Ka, Ya-tā, Kya.

۲۲ Pa, Ya-tā, Cha.

컥 P'a, Ya-tā, Ch'a.

5 Ba, Ya-tā, J'a.

列 Ma, Ya-tā, Nya.

X.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign.

📆 Ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi.

XI.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign and Affix.

ীষ Ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi; kyī, sa, kyi.

XII.—Ya-tā with Vowel-sign and Double Affix.

চিন্ম' K'a, ya-tā, k'ya; k'ya, ḍeng-bu, k'ye; k'yeb, ba, sa, k'yeb.

XIII.—Ya-tā with Prefix and Affix.

ዃጟ Ďa-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kyar, ra, kyar.

5፭ጃ Ďa-wo: pa, ya-tā, cha; chä, la, chä.

XIV.—Ya-tā with Prefix, Vowel and Affix.

ຽ້ງຕ່ Ďa-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi; kyī-la, kyī.

 $5\tilde{\xi}\tilde{\xi}$ Ďa-wo: pa, ya-tā, cha; cha, na-ro, cho; chö', ɗa, chō'.

XV.—Ya-tā with Prefix, Vowel and Double Affix.

স্ট্রান্থ Ba-wo: ka, ya-tā, kya; kya, ģi-ģu, kyi; kyi, ga-sa, kyī.

XVI.—Ya-tā and Affix, each with Vowel-sign.

53 K'a, ya-tā, k'ya; k'ya, deng-bu, k'ye; 'ā, zhyabkyu, 'u; k'ye-'u.

XVII.—Ra-tās and Ha-tās.

Spelt like ya-tās, but the following would be new:-

Ba, bän, na, bän ; ɗa, ha-tā, dʻā ; dʻā, źhyab-k**y**u, d'ū; ka; $B\ddot{a}n-d'\ddot{u}-k\bar{a}$.

Ba, ha-tā, b'ā; b'ā, ra-tā, br'ā; br'ā, źhyab-kyu, br'ū; br'um, ma, br'ūm; ha, ra-tā, hra; hra, ģi-ģu, hri; Br'ūm-hri.

XVIII.—La-tās.

Ka, Ćа, 🗟 Ba, > la-tā, La. Ra, Sa,

Źa, la-tā, Da.

সুনা Ka, la-tā, la; la, na-ro, lo; loģ-ģa, Lo'.

XIX.—Wa-źurs.

あ四 Ts'a, wa-źur, ts'ā; k'a, źhyab-kyu, k'u; k'ug, ga, k'u': $Ts'\bar{a}$ -k'u'.

Żhya, wa-źur, źhyā ; ma, na-ro, mo ; źhya-mo.

T 2 N 5 Ba, na-ro, bo; da, ha-tā, d'ā; d'ā, ģi-gu, d'ī; sa; ta, wa-źur, tâ: Bo-dī-sa-tâ.

XX. Ra-gos, La-gos, and Sa-gos.

Ra, ka- $t\bar{a}$, Ka.

Ra, ģa-tā, Ğ'a.

ξ' Ra, nga-tā, *Nga*.

🖺 La, ka-tā, Ka.

Ka, ga-tā, Ğa.

ਪੁੱ La, nga-tā, Nga.

Sa, ka-tā, Ka.

😽 Sa, ga-tā, Ğa.

🛂 Sa, nga-tā, *Nga*.

In spelling, the Prefix is taken first, then the surmounting letter, then the ya- $t\bar{a}$, or ra- $t\bar{a}$, or other subjunct, then the vowel, then the affix or affixes. Thus:—

সমুদ্ধে Ba-wo: Sa, ga-tā, ga; ga, ra-tā, da; da, zhyab-kyu, du; dung, nga, sa, Dung.

XXI. Miscellaneous Examples.

Pa, päṇ, ṇa, päṇ; ch'a, ḍeng-bu, ch'e; ch'én; na, ch'èn; ra, gi-gu, ri; rin, na, rin; pa na-ro, po; ch'a, ḍeng-bu, ch'e: Päṇ-ch'én, RIN-PO-CH'E, The Grand Lama of Tashī L'ümpo in Tsang, usually called the Tashī Lama, and an incarnation of 'Ö'-paġ-mè'.

রিব্বস্থান্থবি 'A, na-ro, 'o; 'ö', da, 'ö'; da-wo; pa, pag, ga, pag; ma, deng-bu, me; mè', da, mè': 'Ö'-PAG-MÈ', Buddha Amitabha, or Boundless Light.

Ta; La; 'ā, ģi-gu, 'ī; laī; Ba, la-tā, la; ma:

TA-LAI LA-MA, The Dalai Lama, or Spiritual

Head of Tibet until Sir Frank Younghusband's

entry into Lhassa.

৭বুমান্ত্রিমা 'A-wo; ba, ra-tā, da; dā, sa, dā; la, ja-tā, ja;

ja, na-ro, jo; jong, nga, sa, jong: Ďä-jong (pronounced Ďän-jong), Sikkim.

Ra, da-tā, da; da, na-ro, do; ra, ja-tā, Ja; Ja-dengbu, Je; ga, la-tā, la; la, gi-gu, li; ling, nga, ling: Do-Je-ling, or Dor-Je-ling, Darjeeling, or the Place of Ecclesiastical Sway; literally the Place of the Sovereign Stone.

图a. na-ro, bo; bö', da, bö'; sa, ka-tā, ka; Kä', da, Kä': Bö'-ĸä', Language of Tibet.

\S 22.—Transliteration.

For the system adopted in this work of transliterating Tibetan words into Romanized Equivalents see § 2.

The best method, no doubt, is the one that was adopted at the Vienna Congress of Orientalists, and which may be found exemplified in Rai Sarat Chandra Das Bahadur's TIBETAN-ENGLISH DICTIONARY. By that system each letter in a Tibetan word is transliterated, but a line is drawn under every letter that is not pronounced, or it is distinguished by special type from the letters that are pronounced. It is not adopted in this work, as it is really only necessary for purposes of scientific precision.

§ 23.—Use of the Tibetan Dictionary.

The following appears to be the way in which the words in a Tibetan Dictionary (ইন্ইেই T'sɪś-চzö') are arranged.

1.—According to the order of the TKA-LI, or Consonantal Series of the TKA-K'A, regarded as *Initials*, or as they are sometimes called, *Root letters*, with the inherent vowel-sound of KKA. The first thing, therefore, that the student has to do, when he wants to look up a word, is to ascertain what its Initial letter is.

Then the words under each consonant, beginning for instance with $abla^* Ka$, are arranged thus:—

- 2.—The simple consonant, e.g. η
- 3.—The simple consonant with subjuncts like ¬'ā, wa-źur, or ¬r Sha-log-K'a—e.g. ¬¬ L¬-wa, Woollen Blanket.
- 4.—The simple consonant with affixes, single and double, for the order of which as amongst themselves, see § 16.

Then the same with subjuncts.

- 5.—Next, according to the foregoing order as regards their consonants, words qualified by the vowel-signs $\acute{g}i$ - $\acute{g}u$, $\acute{z}hyab$ -kyu, Deng-bu, and Na-ro, in that order.
- 6.—Simple consonant qualified by $ya-t\tilde{a}$ alone.
- 7.—Ya-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 8.—Simple consonant qualified by $Ra-t\bar{a}$ alone.
- 9.—Ra-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 10.—Simple consonant qualified by 5 Ha- $t\bar{a}$ alone.
- 11.—Ha-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 12.—Simple consonant qualified by la-tā alone.
- 13.—La-tā words in all orders down to 5, inclusive.
- 14.—Foreign or other special words formed with the Reversed letters.
- 15.—Words with the Prefixes \P , \P , \P , \P , and \P , in that sequence, and each sequence arranged according to the foregoing orders.
- 16.—Consonant qualified by Ra-ğo.
- 17.—Ra-go words according to foregoing orders.
- 18.—Consonant qualified by La-ğo.
- 19.—La-ğo words according to foregoing orders.
- 20.—Consonant qualified by Sa-ğo.
- 21.—Sa-ğo words according to foregoing orders.
- 22.—No words with α La, as an Initial, and having any Superposed letter like γ or γ , need be looked for under α La. They will only be found under the head of the Superposed letter.

Words in \mathbb{A}^* La, however, are found with qualifying vowel-signs, and such words may be looked for under \mathbb{A}^* La.

N.B.—Csoma de Körös's Dictionary is differently arranged.

 $\S~24$.—Indicative and Differentiating Particles.

নাইমাশা Both, The two together; নাম্ভারাশা All three, The three together. In this connection 3 sometimes replaces শা

रिणा The very, That very; रिणा दुर Just so; रिणा अर् (as a reply) Yes, exactly, precisely, to be sure.

下 K'a. When this particle is used, it is generally found attached to Literary words ending in ず, ぢ, and ば, and to Colloquial words ending in ぢ, or 「い 」

Ex.:—

「다 (properly 두다기) Appetite; 피도자다 (properly 키도자기) Number, Enumeration.

Also sometimes used instead of η as above explained.

A also indicates the top, upper surface, or front of anything

- inanimate. Ex.:— 다 or 다파현 Lid; 독다다 Ridge, or Summit of a hill; 다다 Top, or head of a mountain, or pass; 짓되다 Head of cliff.
- 지 Ga. Used after vowels, or after 도', 저', 저', and 지 It is used as a Differentiating Particle with many roots. Ex.:—씨자지 To disappear; but 씨자지 Branch; 뒷도 Plain or Steppe; but 뒷도'되 Painted Scroll; 黃 Husband; but 黃 지 A man, as distinguished from an effeminate person.
- る Ch'a. Apart from its meanings as a word by itself, this Particle is often seen added to roots. Ex.:— ਤੁਸ਼ਾਂ & (Literary), or ぶる (Colloquial), Echo; 料でも Conversation; 乳ャット Negotiations.
- - 2.—When added to all Cardinal Numbers except স্ট্রিস্ One, it forms the Ordinal Numbers. Thus, স্ট্রিস্ Two, but স্ট্রিস্স্ সংগ্রেষ্টে
 - 3.—It is used also in connection with other enumerational expressions. Ex.:— শুহাসুমান্ত্র দ the শুন্দ or consonantal series of 30

1

letters; মু'না্র্র্র্মান্র' A two-year-old boy; দ্ল্র্নার্র্র্মান্র Measuring a cubit.

4.—It is the sign of the Infinitive Mood, the Verbal Substantive, and the Participle. Ex.:— শ্রুনা'ম' (Lit.) and རྡོས་བཤུ་ང།་ (Coll.)

To preach. The or A preaching, Preaching, Preached. শিরা

নামার্ক্রমান্স্রমা

The last example shows that Zi, added to a root, and helped out by the auxiliary Zi To be, goes to form the Perfect Indicative Tense.

- 5.—芍' is also used to distinguish the different meanings of homonymous roots. Ex.:— 南に Marrow, but 南に切 Foot.
- 6.—In the Colloquial it is often used instead of the supinal particle য়াম' (much used in Literary Tibetan). Ex.:— মিন্দ্রম'মেন্ট্রম্মার্ট্রম'মের বিশ্বামার কিন্তুর আর্মার কিন্তুর আরমার কিন্তুর আনর কিন্তুর আরমার কিন্তুর আরম
- Fo. Indicates an agent. It is then sometimes, e.g. when annexed to the Infinitive, preceded by I pa. Thus, FATT A or the hearer.

It also expresses the idea of the Definite or Indefinite Article

in connection with Noun Substantives. Ex. $\widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}$ An or the eye; $\widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}$ A or the country; $\widehat{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}$ A or the tree, or piece of wood: $\widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}$ A or the road; $\widehat{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}$ The poor.

Used with numerals it also performs the functions of the Definite Article, or of the word aforesaid. Ex.:— The three together.

- 전 P'o. An affixed or prefixed particle, signifying Male, or paternal.

 Ex.:— 5 전 Cock-bird; 연현 Male fox; 전기자자 Bull Yak; 전통 Dog.
- 지 Wa. The form assumed by 지 when the root to which it is annexed ends in a vowel, or in 도', 자', 돈' or 목' In many noun-substantives, however, its place is taken by 지 Ex.:— 역자가 An oriental; 원도가 Valley; 병자자 A provincial or rustic; 원덕자가 A frontiers-man.
- ম' Bo, or Wo. The form assumed by ম' when the root to which it is annexed ends in a vowel, or in ম', ম', ম' or ম' Ex.:—কু'ম' A river; মন্ত্ৰী ল' or ন্ত্ৰী ল' Thumb; স্মন্ত্ৰী Brave.
- 전 Ma. An immovable particle after various roots of substantives.

 Ex.:— 첫 전 Sun; 집 전 Monk; 전 전 Milk. Sometimes, though not always, it indicates the Feminine Gender. Ex.:— 최 전 제 mare.
- 전 Mo. Affixed or prefixed to noun roots, it generally indicates the Feminine Gender. Ex.:— 현전 이 전 원 Bitch. But not always.

 Ex.:— 전자전 Music; 중 전 Top-point.

Attached to adjectives, it does not always indicate gender. Ex. কিবুলৈ Great; মিন্মানে Good, fine.

- স্ত্র A differentiating particle. Ex.:— সুশুর A steep declivity, but সুশুর র A staircase.
- ই Tse. A point, top, or edge. Also, however, an affix of Chinese origin. Ex.:— ব্যাসাই Polish, lustre, brilliant to a point or degree; dazzling; আই A duck; ইন্টি A brass coin; স্মিটি Tibetan name of Confucius.
- \mathfrak{F} Ni. See § 27, 2, on the Definite Article.
- The or an egg; \overline{N} The or \overline{N} The or
- \mathcal{T}^{\bullet} Ku.
- K'u
- $rac{1}{2}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{1}{2}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{1}$ $rac{$
- 5 Ngu.
- δ' Nu.
- \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} Bu, Wu.
- 5. Ru.
- g. Lu.
- 3. 'u
- \mathfrak{A}^{r} Yu.

Definite or indefinite and diminutive particles. Apparently a re-duplication in (Źhyab-kyu) of the final letter of the root. Ex.:— 表写了 A or the mite; 其可可(其可) A or the child; 可可,A or the youth. But not always. Ex.:— 知识 A or the mannikin; 氧环氧了 A or the little drop.

 $\S~25.$ —The Cases and their Signs.

(N.B.—The student is advised to glance at the paragraphs and conjugations relating to the verb To Be. See post.)

The various relations in which a Tibetan Noun and Pronoun may stand to some other word in the sentence are nearly all expressed by means of divers monosyllabic primitive particles, and words compounded therewith, which perform the same functions as are performed by English Prepositions, but which, save for sundry Vocative Signs, are all Postpositional. These relations or cases are as follow:—

I.—THE NOMINATIVE CASE.

Except in connection with Intransitive Verbs (Active; Neuter or Inactive; and Inceptive, i.e., implying a beginning or change of state), and also with the verbs \widetilde{W}_{0}^{*} : T_{0}^{*} be (the mere copula which is used attributively); \widetilde{W}_{0}^{*} : or \widetilde{W}_{0}^{*} : its negative form; \widetilde{W}_{0}^{*} : T_{0}^{*} be, to exist, to be present; \widetilde{W}_{0}^{*} : its negative form; \widetilde{W}_{0}^{*} : its emphatic or intensive form (hardly ever used), and one or two other forms of the verb T_{0}^{*} be used in Literary Tibetan; there is practically no such thing in Tibetan as a verb governed by the Nominative Case. The following is an instance in which, though the practice is irregular, it is allowable and common in the Colloquial to use the Nominative in the usual European way:—

Will you drink tea?

The more correct way would be :—

(or E'A द्युट मी 'भेद यहा'

or A द्युट मी 'मेर्- 'प्रश')

Honorifically:-

ট্রি**ব**'শূর্ম'নার্থম'হ'নঞ্জম'র্মের or

The subject, however, is always put in the Nominative Case in sentences like the following, where, though the verb is Transitive, it is also Passive:—

In such cases a: la is optional, and may be omitted if desired.

The subject is always put in the Nominative Case in sentences like the following, where the verbs are Intransitive (active, neuter, or inceptive):—

द्वं नुमानित्तृम।
द्वम्मानित्तृम।
द्वम्मानित्त्रमा
कर्मान्यमित्रमा
कर्मान्यमित्रमा
केर्मान्यमित्रमा
कुमानित्रमा
द्वम्मानित्रमा
द्वम्मानित्रमा

The horses run.

I am going down to the bazaar.

It is raining.

The sun shines.

The child sleeps.

The child wakes, or breaks from slumber.

Where, however, the verb is transitive, the Nominative Case is never used, but always the Agentive Case. See § 25, VI.

II.—THE VOCATIVE CASE.

There is practically no Vocative Case, but several polite expressions are often used by way of assent, dissent, or address. The commonest is \mathbb{R}^{3} LA, and its variants.

III.—THE OBJECTIVE OR ACCUSATIVE CASE.

This is the same as the Nominative, with or without \mathcal{A} LA, signifying $As\ regards$. Ex.:—

শিষানু মি (মা) ব্রুমাষানি বিশ্বী বুলা। He loves the girl. Literally, By him, as regards the girl, a loving is.

ਉਨ੍ਹਾਂ ਹੈ। अहर्य है।

Do not forget me.

IV.—GENITIVE CASE.

The signs are:—

মা GI, used after words ending with সা, or ত

آن Kyi, used after words ending with جن, جن, or جن, or in the Colloquial after جَرَّ Di, This.

N.B. \longrightarrow \longrightarrow and \longrightarrow may all alike be pronounced \bigcirc in conversation.

1.—Possessive Aspect.

When the word to which the sign is annexed is in that part of the sentence which contains the subject, it should precede the chief substantive of the subject. Ex.:—

ङ्गास्ति स्तृ मानास हेत् भे भित्र मानास हैत् भे भित्र मानास है।

गुद्द न् न स्त्र मानास हैत् भे भित्र मानास है।

गुद्द न स्त्र मानास है मानास है।

मानास मानास (or द्विमास व्यवसार है)

मानास मानास (or द्विमास व्यवसार है)

मानास मानास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास व्यवसार है।

मानास मानास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास व्यवसार है।

मानास मानास है स्वास व्यवसार है।

मानास मानास है स्वास व्यवसार है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास मानास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है स्वास है।

मानास है स्वास है

When the word to which the sign is annexed is indicative of some quality, it may be regarded as an adjective; but, unlike Tibetan adjectives in general, it should *precede* whatever it qualifies. Ex.:—

মু মেরেইন মিন মূর মিন মূর Lhassa is the city of the Jölmo (a sweet-singing bird).

র্ম্বির্মান্ত্রের্মান্ত্রির্মান্তির্মান্তির্মান্তির্মান্তির্মান্তির্মান্তির্মান্তির্মান্তির্মান

N.B.—The particle \Im NI (see § 27, 2) has the effect of singling out and laying stress on the word $\Im \Im$ WA Bö'-YÜ, Tibet. This

English word Tibet seems to have originated from some phrase such as

 จริ วิรี ที่
 DI-BÖD, whence Ti-böt=Tibet; for, to a European (i.e., Con
 tinental, e.g. German) ear the sound of 5' is very like t.

As to the adjectival use of the Genitive case-sign, see also § 30, I, (vi).

3.—Purposive Aspect.

श्रद्भागुः सम्

Formedicine thebox. Themedicine box.

चुःसनानाः मनाः भाषाः or मुन्तिनाः or, For tobacco a bay—A tobacco pouch.

र्ड्याममा।

Money-bag.

इस्राम्य

A leather bag for dry barley flour.

V.—The Dative Case.

1.—The only genuine Dative sign is A' LA, which should be used in this sense after verbs of giving, shewing, speaking or telling, and teaching, and some others.

Ex. :--

दशः हिंदः वादशे करे खेरा शेषा

I will give you the book.

दर्वे केनस द्राव मीस मिला प्रसाग नध्य

My syce showed him the way.

रान्द्र, or वहेंबे.शूट, or वरेची

श्र.ज.र्जुमालनः ५८.।

Tell the man to come.

मिट मीश्रामि के या मिरि दे किशा दिसश नश्चनःलूटः।

He will teach them his (religious) law.

विद्गतीसमार्थेना दे लास स्वी या वा बेर'र' (for य') भेर'यहा

Did you tell the servant not to go?

2.—When the verb To be is used impersonally; for instance, in sentences intended to be the equivalent of English sentences beginning with the phrases, There is, There was, There has been, Tibetan requires that the word to which A LA, when used, is annexed, should precede the chief substantive of the subject. With regard to the idiom for expressing the verb To have, Tibetans use the verb A Yö'-PA, To be present, To exist, in connection with the Dative in A LA, after the manner of the Russians when the latter, instead of saying YA IMEYU, I have, say U MENYA YEST, To me is, or To me there is. Ex:—

रैं हैं देते चूंदायाम्दर्भ व्याप्त There is snow on that hill-top.

If the speaker has some uncertainty regarding the fact to which he is speaking, he will use the verb ব্রুশ instead of অ্র্ Thus:—

মান্ত্রিক্রিমেন্সমেন্ত্রশা

There is (I am almost sure) snow on that hill-top.

If he is not at all sure, but is only hazarding the statement, he will use the phrase \widetilde{W}_{5} 'X' \widetilde{S}_{5} ' Yö-PA-RÈ', pronounced YAW-A-RÈ', instead of either \widetilde{W}_{5} ' or \widetilde{S}_{5} ', or he may even use \widetilde{W}_{5} ' Yong. Thus:—

रै हो देते खेट अन्हार अपित पारेत There is (I understand) snow on that hill-top.

When There is, There was, etc., is used indefinitely, $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}} \Sigma^*$ Youg, Will be, takes the place of the above, much as the future is employed by a Highlander in Scotland to express the present tense. Thus:—

ALTENTITÀ ALTENTITÀ THERE are (I expect), or There will be, very many trees in that valley down there.

3.—The following examples also illustrate the verb To have:—
মান্দ্রী

মন্মন্নিমেশ্বামানি (মির্ is not No, he has no parents.

used now.)

Yes, he has parents (emphatic).

4.—The Dative instead of the direct construction may also be used thus:—

্রেই রৌমঝামাট্রিই শূী ডোমানার রৌ তের মান্তর ।

I suppose your mother is aged.

Literally, To my mind your mother seems aged.

The Honorific form of this would be:-

দ্রে শ্রেমর এ দ্রিব শ্রী প্রেম শ্রু শার্নির । ব্লিদের্নি বলীর শ্রেমির শ্রেম শ্রু

About, or concerning, is also expressed by A' la. Thus:—

त्रश्राचीटाटा (च) हुटे. or श्रूटः। जश्राचीटाटा (च) हुटे. or श्रूटः। I was or have been troubled about many affairs.

VI.—THE AGENTIVE CASE.

This case, which expresses the idea of anything being done by a person or thing, should always be used instead of the Nominative case with Transitive Verbs. The case-signs are as follow, and are annexed to the subject, that is to say, to the noun-substantive, the adjective if any, the definite or indefinite article, if any, or to the phrase constituting the subject.

N' SA, usable after vowels, or after a consonant sounding in inherent SN' a. This SN' is silent, but modifies the immediately preceding vowel-sound. See § 3.

 (N.B.— শ্রীমা', শ্রীমা', and শ্রীমা' may all be pronounced শ্রীমা' Ši.)
ম্মা' Yi

used after words ending with vowels.

way Yi

used in versification after vowels.

EXAMPLES :--

मु:सर्जिशयदान्दायदाम्ब्रियाहान्ब्रिशः गु:तर्नुमा

Lamas often drink tea.

नेत्रश्चर केत्ने नेश मुर्जे देश स्था मार्जेश भार्त्से र कर सुना मी प्रमुना।

चैशःशूटः। चै.रुपु.त्राभाष्मेशःतूशःश्लेरःकःपर्नु.पर्टशः If you had told me the truth I would have forgiven you.

I cannot give him the work.

She will not eat her food.

Then a serving layman will bring food. (Amundsen).

Then the messenger pours out the wooing-beer for both the parents of the girl.

(Amundsen).

The two parents of the boy thus consulted (conversed).

(Amundsen).

2.—In connection with the Agentive Case it is convenient here to notice the affix $K(\bar{A}N)$, which in various ways is extensively used in Tibetan, much as $K(\bar{A}N)$, which in various ways is extensively used in Tibetan, much as $K(\bar{A}N)$, or $K(\bar{A}N)$, is used in Persian to indicate a *Doer*. It may also be likened to the English affix ER, in words such as $Behold_{ER}$, $Murder_{ER}$, etc. Later on it will be fully dealt with in connection with the Verb. Here it is only briefly alluded to as a sort of Active Participle annexed to Verbal Roots. Ex.—

दर्गे साम्ब

Po-K'AN, The goer, He who goes.

लूट.श्राप्तर.

Yong-K'an, The comer, He who comes.

বরু-মামর

DI-K'ÄN,

The writer, He who writes.

It is found thus in the Literary Tibetan into which the New Testament has been translated:—

বৃদ্ধান্ত্র বিশ্বরাধান্তর বাদ্ধান্তর বিশ্বর বিশ্ব

He who built all things is God (Heb. iii. 4).

श्रुशःगुदःस्टःय5दःश्राम्बःमुःगुम्बाशःयः २५४:यःदेःदेःयदेवःयःश्रेवःदे ।

But he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true (John vii. 18).

It is also used adjectively, thus:-

लिना में साम्बन्धी है।

The man who steals sheep.

The way in which it is used with the different tenses will be found explained in the paragraphs on The Pronoun (§ 31, IX, A), and The Verb (§ 38, V., D.), and in the Appendix of Conjugations.

VII.—THE LOCATIVE CASE.

This case expresses relations of Space, but implies also the idea of Rest.

The common case-signs are the following primitive particles:—

$$\left\{ egin{array}{ll} \mathbf{A}' & \mathbf{L}\mathbf{A} \\ \mathbf{A}' & \mathbf{N}\mathbf{A} \end{array}
ight\} \colon In,\,On,\,At,\,By,\,\,\mathrm{etc.}$$

Also ব্যকু বৃষ্ণ Gyt'-মম: Through.

Sometimes the more Literary particles 5, Tu, 5, Ďu, 5 Ru, T. R., Su, are also met with.

EXAMPLES:-

मिं क्षासराया क्षेत्रणी ततुना

He lives in Lhassa proper.

वृद्ध्यान्त्राचाश्चरः र्चाश्चम्बरः।

Please speak in Tibetan.

दश्रमिं विति सुर्वा सुरः (for सःरः)

I saw him sitting next his brother.

त्रातर्वेचा.चोश । शक्रुरे.धेब.टे.लेचा.हुतु.चीट.क्रुट.ची.तचीश.

Does the chhörten remain by the shepherd's tree?

المِية درياً العدر من المريرة ، ا

He will be at his own house.

८स.ट्रे.ज्रुं कुंश.ज. (or व) वर्योब्यश.च.लुब्री

I have read it in a history-book.

मृ पु. त्य. भश मृ पु. हुर्. त. ता. प्र. पश्चीत.

His mother kissed him on the forehead.

The following Colloquial examples illustrate the use of compound postpositions as expressive of the same Locative idea:—

् वा सुना अंदर देश । वा सुना अंदर देश वि अंता सामिना की स्टेर दास.

Will the servant wait outside?

टपु.र्जूब.ज.भ.च<u>ब</u>ैचोश.र्स्चोश.चोबट.।

Please do not stand in front of me.

वर्न्। वर्न्।

Tibet is beyond Sikhim.

चीःचरःषःतर्च। दय्यःहिंदशःचषःश्वेषःन्दःतर्येचाःश्वेषः

Sikhim is between Nipāl and Butān.

मिट.ता.कृते.तयास्यात.**त**र्येचा।

The house is near the river.

इ.९.कूपुं होट.ज. (or होट.टे. or

It is snowing on the hill-tops.

र्ट्यामुयायदे दरायात्रुमा

ब्रुटगुःसमामुदेरदगुवायः (or बटाबः)

ब्राह्म (or मान्या) तर्मा।

विस्त्रायद्भा । विस्त्रायद्भा ।

सुन्तुःसःसुनःगुःदन्ता। सुन्तुःनेदेदेशस्याःसदेनःद्वाःसामःसुनःदकः The money is inside the leather bag.

The wolf is in the midst of the flock of sheep.

The city stands beside a big river.

The court of justice is near a pretty garden.

The child creeps under the pony's legs.

It will be seen that the above Locative postpositions are used with the Genitive Case, that is, they are connected by means of the Genitive sign with the substantive or other part of speech to which they refer.

Notice, however, the following constructions:-

मिल्नादेर्त्तर्मे मिट्टा स्ट्रीस्टर्मी विकार के स्ट्रीस्टर्मी स्ट्रीस्टर्मी स्ट्रीस्टर्मी स्ट्रीस्टर्मी स्ट्रीस

नियः (or र्रे.स्.) गान्यःमक्षेत्रःग्रीःचरः वर्मुद्रःवसःदर्भेर्द्रम्थिःग्रीःरेद्र।

देश्यान्त्रे क्षायम् विष्यान्त्रीत्र क्षायम् वर्षे स्वाप्ते क्षायम् The dog chases the hen round the house.

The load must pass through between the two posts.

The train, passing through the midst of the rocky hill, inside the constructed path, ran = The train ran through the rock by the tunnel.

VIII.—THE PERIODAL OR DURATIONAL CASE.

This case expresses relations of *Time*. Its common signs are the same primitive particles as those which denote the Locative Case, namely:—

 $\left. \begin{array}{c} \P' \text{ NA} \\ \Pi' \text{ LA} \end{array} \right\} At, \ In, \ During, \ \text{etc.}$

There are also others, like \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} Ru, \mathfrak{T}^{\bullet} Ra, \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} Du, \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} Dü, etc.

Sometimes the sign is used alone, and sometimes it forms part of compound postpositions, or even of precedent adverbial expressions.

EXAMPLES:-

मिं हैं हैं र नाशुक्ष त्य दे ने र ने कि हैं हैं र नाशुक्ष त्य दे ने कि हैं र ने हैं

८शः हिँद् त्यः ङ्ख्यः माशुस्रः मी विदः त्यः ङ्ख्यूदः व्यादः ।

(or शक्रम्य) स्थान्त्रीयः । मिर्टित्ते (or नर्र) रेश्वरिन्यः मिर्टित्ते (or नर्र) रेश्वरिन्यः सुमात्त्रीयः (or नर्र) रेश्वरिन्यः

શ્રું- દશ્ચાસદશ-મુશ-મુશ-ફેશ-લુનાશ-વેશ-મુઃર્પેન્।

ર્સેન્'બ'દશ'.બદ'5વે'.કેર'સાવન'મી'.ભસ' વન'દે'.બેશ'મી'.ખેરી

र्वयः भेरा। क्षामित्रमात्मा हिंग्हे स्त्रीय पुरस्का स्रोते स्तुः

He must go at three o'clock.

He came to India in his twentieth year.

I shall pay you within three months.

At (or during) the first salutation Tibetans present ceremonial scarfs to each other.

The devil disappeared at dusk.

I knew the doctrine of Buddha a long time ago.

I knew the Amban named Shangtāi a short time ago.

At the same time (or At a certain time) he was Chinese Ambassador in Darjeeling.

Since that time, so I have heard, he has died.

र्डें हैं स्विने मुनाता (or नर-र्नु) अंधिर Please do not come till five o'clock.

वित्रमानुनात्राञ्चेत्रशयान्त्रि ! At last you have arrived!

ইবি:ক্ট'মে'মান্ত্রীবর্ম' (or খ্রীবর্মান্ত্রীবর্মা On the way up to (i.e. before reaching or getting to) the hill top, you will be tired.

क्र्राणुःरेर्।

In sentences like the following, where the durational signification is obvious, the case-sign (say 5 NA' DÜ-LA) is omitted:—

It has rained for (or during) two

hours.

That is to say, it is unnecessary to say & 57 TON, just as in English it suffices to say It has rained two hours, instead of for two hours.

IX,-THE MODAL CASE.

This Case is intended to include all that is connoted by the term Instrumental Case, and some other additional significations. The signs are:—

বৃষ্ণ Nম: By, Through, By way of, Via.

55' DANG: With, Against.

N' SA (silent): With, Because, Since, etc. Also the Participial idea.

EXAMPLES :-

क्तिं सेट क्या स्नित्ति । इ.टे. सेच राजा क्या प्रहारा (or वहेंट्) ।

ये.चडिट.ब.मेट.स.वश.चडेट.।

३.च बटा य.सम्ब्रायश्चरा।

য়ःसःदेःक्ष्सःदैरःबश्रःजयःवैरः।

ट.कू.ज.जभ.यो.ज.हची.च.रेट.बेची.चैट.।

वियशः यन् रहेँशः कुषाः यो निरः सहसायः रेन ।

चक्रुं राखेट : दस्र । क्रुं या चित्रं व्याप्त : व्यापत : व्याप

দর্ভ্র নি 'ব্রুশ্র মশ্র মার্ডির মার্শ্র মার্ক্র মার্শ্র মার্ক্র মার্ক্তর মার্ক্

म्बेर (भः) ब्रेन्स्यर्ट्रा

करामरानी मुनिन्तीका मिसिन्दार्भराय केरा

सीयटार्श्राटः । स्रीयः स्त्रायः इतः हेः स्त्रीटः यसीद्यः पश्चियः सी सीय्टः राष्टः कृषः स्वटः सी सिट्टः यमीः पीकाः यमोः पीकाः सित्यः साव्याः स्वतः स्वयः स्वर्धः स्वर्धः Accost (or call to) him by name.

Seize the horse by the reins.

If you catch the fowl, catch it by the legs.

If you grasp the fish, grasp it by the head.

The lamas spoke through trumpets.

We met (or fell in) with robbers on the road.

The Shyab-pä's (Źhāpés) have had an interview with the Regent.

Will the Regent agree with the opinion of the Kā-löns?

Our soldiers have fought with the enemy, or against the enemy.

Strike the nail with the hammer.

He was ruined by, through, or on account of, the beer-house.

The Pän-chhen-rim-po-chhe, or Tsang-pän-chhen, called the Tashi Lama, came from Tashilhümpo via Darjeeling.

Colloquially:-

हिंद्र र्द्ध सामान्येत स्मेर सामान्येत स्मेर सामान्य सामान्य सामान्य सामान्य सामान्य सामान्य सामान्य सामान्य स

Again:-

ट.लूब.चंश.भ.पहचाश.चुचा।

It is I: be not afraid: Literally, It being I, etc.

Colloquially:-

ट सेंदि खंटा (ब्रेटा) स ब्रेटि केमा

The following also is Literary:—

रेंदे 'द्वेर' मिं प्रमाश्चिर' or होद्' या श्वीर'। Through or by what was he ruined?

X.—The Ablative Case.

Postpositions such as 55° DANG, 58° NÃ, and CASC LÃ, all signifying From, From amongst, From amidst, Out of, etc., are usually assigned to this case; but inasmuch as, when carrying those significations, they really express the idea of Direction from, they have been placed under the heading Terminative Case.

মেন, however, possesses meanings other than Direction from.

Accordingly, (AN) LX, and of NA, may be taken as the signs of the Ablative Case, as expressive of significations such as the following:—

디지: LX: Than, Except, Save, But, But for, Besides, etc.

5. NA (with negative): Unless, If..not.

EXAMPLES:-

र्बेट-शुःलूटः। बेटशःतट्-टु-मी-मोट-ज-श्विःच-चिश्-जशःजशः The Shapé will not stay in India except for a few months, i.e. longer than a few months.

ह्रिंट मी बटाया नुस्रमा स्थान हिमा यहा स्था तन्मा

There was nobody in the fortress except one soldier.

.पर.पाता.रक्ष.मुंहा.माहिमा.पाता.मोर.गीर. सट.पुंकाम्य.मुंहा.पुंचा।

८र्ने : स्थाना विदासे न

বন্যুম:ঘার্ক্ত: हमा:धार्क्यचाः व, দ্রিই: ক্র্র্য রমধ্য

When the Oriental possesses nothing but one piece of cotton cloth he is often happy.

Besides this there is no other.

Unless all the work is done you will get no pay.

Unless travellers are not robbed, i.e. If travellers are robbed, you will all be punished.

Resort may also be had to the phrase নামট (or নামট্টা) ত GÄ-TE (or ĠÄ-ṬI')..NA, with a negative, If..not, or even the ਨ NA alone, as above, without the নামট . Thus:—

नाय हे हिंद के श्रेस्थ शे हुन द।

Colloquially:—

हिंदिक्त विद्यान

मिन्द्राम्ये मुला ह्या ता से न

श्रेय.वे.स.सीत.य।

चित्रामी तारेचीश श चलेची व ।

Unless ye repent, or If ye repent not (Literary. | Luke xiii. 3, 5).

Unless you repent.

Unless the dog is at the entrance door.

 $Unless\ the\ petition\ is\ presented.$

Unless the agreement (bond) has been signed.

The following are Literary expressions used in the New Testament:—

মি'ঝ্ল'র্মঝ'ম'নার্বিন্থ'নাম'ন্'**ব্না**'রমঝ' **ডের**' etc.

Except the apostles they all, etc. (Acts viii. 1).

देश्यः बद्दारे दिन्द्रा हिंद्र है। केंद्रा देन किंगा केंद्र दे।

Besides all this, between us and you is (being) a great gulf (Luke xvi. 26).

Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, i.e. fornication not having been committed. (Matt. v. 32).

These may be rendered Colloquially thus:-

श्रे श्रु के सम्मित्रम्थः (or श्रेष्यः) दे के त्रम्था उदः etc.

Except the apostles they all, etc.

चैश्वात्रश्चामःचे**त्रत्व।** श्रेश्वान्तिः स्टान्त्रीःश्चेश्चित्रात्त्र्याः स्वा Whosever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication—If anybody divorces his wife, fornication not having been committed.

रेक्षामित्रम्बः (or रेक्षिक्यः) टार्के**र्**ट मित्रिके वेश्वरावाम्यदाम्बरायाकेक याविमार्थेर्ज्डा

Besides all this, between us and you is (being) a great gulf, etc.

The expressions Apart from, and Rather than, are rendered thus:-

दशः हिंद् श्वामात्रिक्षः स्वेदः नीः क्षेत्र। दक्षः हिंद् श्वामात्रम् स्वेदः नीः क्षेत्र।

I have two rupees, but apart from that I will give you nothing.

वित्रायान्य वित्या क्षेत्राया यहा वित्या वित्या क्षेत्राया यहा वित्या क्षेत्राया यहा वित्या वित्या

I would rather give you food than money.

Or বহুম:মাধ্য

Would give.

XI.—THE TERMINATIVE OR TRANSITIVE CASE.

This case denotes the relations of a noun or pronoun with reference to its *Direction* in *Time* or *Space*, either *towards* or *from* something mentioned in the sentence, and it may imply the idea of *motion* as well as that of *rest*. Under it come, as already stated, many expressions signifying *direction from*, which in other books are assigned to the Ablative Case.

The signs of the case as thus defined are:-

5' Ďυ: after final Γ', 5', 5', 8', 8', 8', 8'

ን Tu: after final 쥐, 5.5쥐, ና

ス RA

after final vowels.

⊋. Ba ∙

মু' Su: after final ঝ'

A' La: commonly used in the Colloquial after anything, and possessing the significations of all the above signs.

DIRECTION TOWARDS.

5도' ĎANG 5점' NÄ DIRECTION FROM. 건정' LÄ

EXAMPLE:-

1.—DIRECTION TOWARDS.

รรัร Bar-อับ: Up to, Until, As far as, As long as..not.

্রম্বিন্ধান্ত্রি আর্থিন স্থানি আর্থিন তেওঁ, I have not seen him.

5.77.5. Hitherto.

ริลิ สราร or ริ สราร Until then, Up to that time.

মার্থিসমেই সমাজ As long as it has not been obtained, i.e. Until it has been obtained.

วันวัง D'ANG พังลท-อับ: Together with, Along with, In Company with.

मिनु श्राप्त के प्राप्त के प्राप्त के कि desert. He has been dwelling with wild beasts in the desert.

ริบิสร์ Kyi-bu: Amongst, Amidst, Into the midst of.

बिसी उर्जे अर्पायि मुद्धि सुर्जे वित्र्णीय रुस्स्टिक्षणी प्राप्त The cat springs in amongst the twittering sparrows (little gray birds.)

শৃত্যু Gän-bu: Towards.

श्रे र्ह्माश्रे द्वार मीमान दुत्र प्रेमिन दुना The crowd is going towards the palace.

555 NANG-DU: Into.

निर्ने द्वित निर्मु अर्दे स्थायि निर्मे प्राप्त निर्मे The dog wishes to jump into the water.

র্দার্' T'06-TU: In the direction of; Towards.

নি নি গুনার্ প্রান্ত প্রান্ত প্রান্ত প্রান্ত বিশ্ব বি

 $\left\{\begin{array}{cc} \mathbf{5}^{\bullet} & \mathrm{Ra} \\ \mathbf{5}^{\bullet} & \mathrm{Ru} \end{array}\right\} To.$

ধ্র'ন্যুক্র'রে (or ম', or নার্ক্রম') বর্মমেরি The boy has been sent to sea.

মি'অ'ব্যান্ত্র' অন্যান্ত্র' He has come from up there hitherward.
মি'অ'ব্যান্ত্র' অন্যান্ত্র' He has come from down there hitherward.
মি'অ'ব্যান্ত্র' অন্যান্ত্র' He has come from over there, or yonder, hitherward.

म्निम् The ants are swarming near my feet.

হা'ড়' Ma-Ru: Down to.

८ मिं अस्त त्रे ने भेरि I am going down to the bazaar.

মান: Mar: Downwards, Down; আন: Yar, Upwards, Up.

- তেমেন্দ্রেল্লিমেন্দ্রিন্ল্লিমেন্দ্রিন্লিমেন্দ্রিন

N' Su: To, Towards.

5ুমান্ত্র' (or মা) ম্বর্ণাট্র মেনুনা It is getting towards the time. মিন্দ্রান্ত্রমান্ত্রমান্ত্রমান্ত্রমান্ত্রমান্তর He has gone to his own abode.

ইনিমাম Ch'ō-la, or ইমাম Ngö-la: Towards, On, etc.

Aअगादि र्द्धन अप्याप्त प्राप्त के प्रिन्थ प्राप्त के प्राप्त के स्थान के Assistant of the road there are houses, on that side meadows.

5্ৰাম Dö-la: To the time; at the time of.

รูฟาตาสาพัน It came down to the time, i.e. The time arrived รุฟาตาสาพัน The time will come.

วราฐเกา Bar-nang-nu ? or จราน Bar-la: Over, above.

युः सायेव दे प्रमें दे प्रमें दे प्रमाय प्रम प्रमाय प्रम प्रमाय प्रमाय

মূর্'ম' Ngön-la: Ahead, In front.

प्रते :श्वेंद त्यां कृता Go on ahead (or in front) of me.

2.—Direction from.

55 DANG: From. This is Literary.

अर्के देश अर्क अर्थ दे दि द्वा दे दे प्राप्त The lake is far from the frontier.

धनाहार देनु देने द्वार प्राप्त कि husk was separated from the grain.

ላኝ Nä: From.

हुत्र-दे नेट ह्यूट कुट केट केट कि snake has crawled from between the bushes.

निः भे दे नुः द्वेन नि देन दश्मान्य निन्न निन्न निन्न निन्न The cat creeps from under the table.

विस्नापिट ने भुसार होट हे ये विमानसा स्मा हे ये पितृमा The Court of Justice is close to (literally from) a pretty garden.

মি'অ'রম'শ্বম'শ্রির'শ্র'মি'মি' He has gone from up there thitherward.

মিনাৰ্মাবন দ্বীবামানি He has gone from down there thitherward.

५ तमः श्रीतः कर प्रभाति । And not speak to you.

র্দাসার্থান্থ্যামীর From the beginning it was not so.
—(New Testament).

Colloquially :-

র্থির বিশ্বর্থার বিশ্বর্থা (or বিশার), or বিশোবিশে র্থারিক From the beginning it was not so.

মিন্মান্সানুন He originated from the Lotus.—(S. C. Das.)

रें नुस्नानेन पर्के न्योक क्लिका क्लिका Meanwhile the younger ones must recite their books by (literally from) heart.—(Amundsen).

지치 LA: Out of.

§ 26.—Numerals.

I.—The Cardinal Numbers, according to 되도라면 (or 중시면) 중지 되고 한 DANG-KYI (or TSI-KYI) NAM-DANG, Arithmetical Enumeration.

English Figure.	Tibetan Figure.	Tibetan Name.	Romanized Equivalent.
3	2	নৃষ্টিনা	Chi'.
2	3	ন্যসূথ্য	Ňyī.
3	3	নাধ্যম:	Sum.
4	=	ସବି:	Žhyi.
5	v	පි.	Ňga.
6	S	<u>र्</u> चना	Ри'.
7	\boldsymbol{v}	ন্বুৰ	Ďün.
11 8	٨	ন্কুই	Ğyä'.
9	e	55]	Ğu.
10	20	বৰু, or বৰু.ধ্ৰম.ন.	Chu, or Chu t'ampa.
11	22	বস্তু-দান্তদা	Chuģ-chi'.
12	23	বস্তু:শান্ত্রীয়া	chug-ňyī.
13	23	বস্তু-দাধ্যুম	Chuģ-sum.
14	20	ସହି:ସବି:	Chub-žhyi.
15	2 r	নউন্থ	Chö-nga.
16	25	বঞ্-ইনা.	Chu-du'.
17	ov.	বন্ধ:	Chub-ďün.

English Figure.	Tibetan Figure.	Tibetan Name.	$\begin{array}{c} {\rm Romanized} \\ {\rm Equivalent.} \end{array}$
18	22	বউ-বন্ধু-	Chob-gyä'.
19	<i>2</i> e	বস্তু:বৃন্যু:	Chu-ğu.
20	રુ		Nyi-shu, or Nyi- shu t'am-pa.
		ि भुः सः माउँमा, or	Nyi-shu tsag-chi'.
21	37	े हेर माउँमा, or	Nyer-chi'.
		्रि:पु:संमिठमा, or रेन्:मिठमा, or समिठमा	Tsag-chi'.
22	33		(Nyi-shu tsaģ-ňyī.
	33	(इ.चोट्टेश. १५.मी.इ.चोट्टेश. or	Tsaģ-ňyī.
30	30	র্পথ. ^{ত্ত} .' or র্পথ. ^{ত্ত} .রথ.শ.	Sum-chu, or Sum- chu t'am-pa.
31		(শুমান্ত মিঁ নাউনা', or	Sum-chu sog-chi'.
5.	32	∫ শ্রুম'ন্ত 'র্ম'নাউনা', or } ম্যানাউনা'	Sog-chi'.
40	ص ص	ন্ত্ৰ-নত্ত', or নত্ত্বি-নত্ত-প্ৰধ্ন'ন	Źhyib-chu, or Žhib-chu t'am- pa.
41		(निलेनिडु लेमिडिमा, or	Žhib-chu źhye-chi.
		∫নন্ত্ৰ'ন্ত্ৰ'ল্'লাইদা', or ্লি'দাউদা'	Źhye-chi'.
50	γ°	ভূ' ন ত্ত', or ভূ'নত্ত'রম্মন	Ňgab-chu, or Ngab-chu t'am- pa.
51	V-2	্রি'নম্ভ'দ'ন্যবিদা', or	Ngab-chu nga-chi'.
		ि ट'मिडेमा	Nga-chi'.
60	So	ঠুনান্ত, or ঠুনান্ত রমান	Dug-chu, or Dug- chu t'am-pa.
61	\$2	∫ तुमारु:रे:मारुमा, or रे:मारुमा	Dug-chu re-chi'. Re-chi'.

English Figure.	Tibetan Figure.	Tibetan Name.	Romanized Equivalent.
70	vo	ন্দুৰান্ত", ০৮ নদুৰান্তান্তমানা	Ďün-chu, or Ďün chu t'am-pa.
71	v2	(नर्नुक्छ देव महिमा, or दिनुक्महिमा	∫ Ďön-chu đön-chi'.
		र्विन्युडेम्) Ďön-chi'.
80	40	ব্রুব্তু, ০া ব্রুব্তুর্মান	Ğyä'-chu, or Ğyä' chu t'am-pa.
81	_	(নর্নুস্'স্তু'ম্বা'মাউমা', or	(Ğyä'-chu gya-chi
01	49	्रिम्कुर् छ मु माहिमा, or	Gya-chi'.
90	ලං	ব্না নত্ত, or ব্না নত্ত রমান	Ğub-chu, or Ğuk chu t'am-pa.
91	62	्रम्]'त्रु'म् रम्'म् रम्', or	(Ğub-chu go-chi'.
		(मान्यहमा	do-chi'.
100	200	ন্নু', or বন্তু'র্ম'ন'	Ğya, or Ğya-t'an pa.
101	202	বর্কু'ব্হ'শ্বউশ্	Ğya Ğdang ehi'.
200	२००	ঈ'ন্ত্রু', or ঈশ্ল'ন্ত্রু'	Nyib-ğya, or Nyīl ğya.
300	300	য়ৢয়'য়য়ৢ৾'	Sum-ğya,
400	200	বন্ত্ৰী'বন্ত্ৰী'	Žhyib-ğya.
500	Vco	ন্থ-স্কু:	Ňgab-ğya.
1000	2000	क्टूंट', or क्टूंट'स्ना'	Tong, or Tong-t's
5500	v, v 00	ब्रुंट संग्रह.रट. हि.च ग्री.	Tong-ţʻa' nga ɗar ngab-ğya.
10,000	20,000	मिं, or मिं:स्ना	Ţ'i, or Ţ'i-ţ'a'.
100,000	200,000	র্নুম', or র্নুম'র্না'	Bum, or Bum-ț's
1,000,000	2,000,000	¥I.M.	Sa-ya.
10,000,000	20,000,000	हेप.	J'e-wa.

All towards to the following to the

English.	Tibetan.	Romanized equivalent.
100 millions	ర్ష్.	Ďung-ch'ur.
1000 millions	કે ર. ∀ટીથ.	T'er-Ďum.
10,000 millions	बेर-५नुम-केन-घॅ-	T'er-bum ch'em-po.
100,000 millions.	चिना चिना	T'ag-t'i'.
A billion	सिमा सिमा क्रेय से	T'ag-ț'i' ch'em-po.
10 billions	र्यःयण्यः	Rab-ṭam.
100 billions	<u> ২ব.ঘ</u> শস.ছথ <u>,</u> মূ.	Rab-ṭam ch'em-po.
1000 billions	নাসম্ম	Tam.
10,000 billions	নাব্যাখ্য ক্রবি হাঁ	Ťam-ch'em-po.
100,000 billions	বু শুনা≼া.	Tī'.
1,000,000 billions	ব ূলুমাহাক্তব, <u>সূ</u>	Ţī ch'em-po.

N.B.—To the above succeed progressive numbers increasing by multiples of ten up to sixty enumerations, counting 100 millions as the ninth. These sixty enumerations are used for astronomical and astrological purposes. Sanskrit equivalents exist only up to the fifty-first enumeration. See Rai Sarat Chandra Das Bahadur's Dictionary, article 可反对 GRANGS (Dang).

II.—The Cardinal Numbers, according to 可语含氧矿氧压矿 Ka-K'AI ŇAM-PANG, Alphabetical Enumeration.

The following system of Numerical Notation is employed by Tibetans in their Registers, Indices, and the like. It only goes up to 300, and consists of an adaptation of the TA. It may be regarded as the equivalent of our own method of Notation by means of the Roman letters.

1	to	30	η,	P,	শ্,	and	so	on	to	মে.
31	,,	60	गीः,	Ä,	मीं,	,,	,,	,,	,,	જી.
61	,,	90	Ŋ,	ب .	町,	,,	٠,	,,	99	প্লী.
91	,,	120	गों,	A.	मों,	"	,,	,,	,,	छो.
121	,,	150	में ,	Ã,	मां,	39	,,	1,	,,	<u>i</u>
151	., ,	180	Д.	Ţ.,	না,	"	,,	,,	,,	ও থে.
181	,,	210	G 6 7	यं,	में तिं तिं	"	,,	"	"	J 597
211	,,	240	711	Z.		"	,,	"	,,	
241	,,	270	में,	म्लाम् वाराज्य	में,	"	3	"		নুত্র, ক্ষের
271	,,	300	でかずの旨で	H,	मंत्रांमंत्रींमंत्	99	,,	,,	"	ह्यू.

NOTES.

1.—Pronunciation.

The Colloquial custom of pronouncing the prefix of a second syllable with, and as though it were part of, the preceding syllable, is really incorrect, and is not followed in Literary Tibetan. Thus, সম্ভান্তিশি Eleven, pronounced Chuć-chi' in Colloquial, is pronounced Chu-chi' in Literary Tibetan. So সম্ভান্তি Fourteen, pronounced Chub-žhyi in Colloquial, is pronounced Chub-žhyi in Literary Tibetan.

2.—Affixes.

USATATO TAM-PA, signifies full, or complete, and is almost exclusively used with the full tens, up to and inclusive of a hundred; meaning thereby a collective body, or whole lot, of any of those numbers. It is, however, similarly, but much less frequently, applied to numbers below ten.

After a hundred and with thousands 젖피 T'A' is used. Also after expressions denoting periods of time, such as 지기자 한자- T'A', a week : 집작기 DA- T'A', a month.

With numbers above thousands & Ts'o; is used.

0

As regards all these affixes, however, their use or non-use is quite optional.

3.—Conjunctions.

Note that where units are connected with some multiple of ten, the conjunction used is different for each series. In the 20 series it is \$\mathbb{E}^* \text{TsA}; in the 30 series, \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{So}; in the 40 series, \$\mathbb{Q}^* \text{Zhye}; in the 50 series, \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{NgA}; in the 60 series, \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{Re}; in the 70 series, \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{Oon}; in the 80 series, \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{GyA}; in the 90 series, \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{Go}. With the hundreds it is \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{Dang}. It would not, however, be wrong to use \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{Dang} in all cases. In Literary Tibetan both \$\mathbb{N}^* \text{Dang}, and one of the other conjunctions (usually) \$\mathbb{E}^* \text{TsA}, are used together. Thus \$\mathbb{N}^* \mathbb{N}^* \mathbb{N} \mathbb{N} \mathbb{N} \text{Tong Dang TsA sum, 1003}. This is not done in the Colloquial.

In the Colloquial the short forms সুস্টিস্ Tsad-chi', 21; সুস্টুম্ Tsad-nyi, 22; ইন্টেস্ Sod-chi', 31; ইন্টেস্ Sob-zhyi, 34; and the like, are very often heard instead of the longer forms, গুলুস্স্বিস্ Nyi-shu-tsad-chi', 21, etc.

When dates are being stated or enumerated, the ぞ TsA, or 5年 Ďang in the 20 series is dropped, and the form with 多年 Nyer is used, e.g. 多千子頭5七 Nyer-gyë'-pa, the 28th.

4.—The Indefinite Article, see § 28.

5.—APPROXIMATE NUMBERS.

 add উদা Chi', a or an, to any of these expressions. Thus, সাইশ্বা

Another method is to employ the adverb ঠিন' TSAM, About, Just about, As many as. Ex. মানিউনাঠন Sod CHI' TSAM, About 31, or As many as 31; or the adverbs চূমেন HA-LAM, স্ট্রেড GA-CH'EN, সুমে TSAR, or মুনুমামে DAM-LA, signifying nearly, almost. In these cases the adverb follows the numeral it qualifies.

6.—Ordinal Numbers.

The first is rendered $5 \stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma} \stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma}$ Dang-po, and The very first $\stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma} \stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma} \stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma} \stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma}$ JE-Dang-po. With these exceptions the ordinals are merely the cardinals plus the particle $\stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma}$ PA. Ex. $\stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma} \stackrel{\sim}{\Sigma} \stackrel$

7.—DISTRIBUTIVE NUMBERS.

When simple numerals are repeated in juxtaposition, e.g. The simple numerals are repeated in juxtaposition, e.g. The simple sum, Three-three, the meaning may be either three each, or three at once, or three at a time, or in threes, according to the way the sentence is framed. For instance, phrases like Three at a time, or In threes, or One at a time, are rendered by help of the expression 5%7%. J'Ä-NÄ, or CHÄ NÄ, literally Having done or Having made. Thus:—

च्रि.क्र्.र.र.वेश.वश.त्रवश.वैट.। च्रि.क्र्.श्रेश.श्रेश.वेश.वश.व्य.श्रंटः।

They set out in threes, or three at a time.

They arrived one by one, or one at a time.

Expressions like Three each, Two each, One each, are rendered by $\vec{\lambda}$: Re-re and a repeated numeral, but without the \vec{J} $\vec{\lambda}$ \vec{J} \vec

Thus :-

भै:रे:रे:त्राञ्चेर:भें:शुभ:शुभ:रेंदि: | Each man got three rupees. रेंश्रादारे:रे:त्राञ्चेर:भेंदि: | Give each coolie one rupee.

In the case of composite numerals like বুঁর্'মাইমা' Dön-chi', Seventy-one, only the last number of the compound is repeated. Ex.:—
বুঁর'মাইমা' মাইমা' Dön-chić-chi', Seventy-one each, seventy-one at a time, or In seventy-ones.

8.—AGGREGATES.

Tr Po, thus affixed, may also signify the aforesaid, if the context so requires.

9.—Fractions.

These are usually expressed by adding the word & Ch'A, Part, to the cardinal, which is sometimes put in the Genitive Case. Thus:—

1grd is rendered by সাহাস্টে Sum-ch'a.

¼th ,, ,, ,, ,, ସବି:ፚ Żнүі-сн'а.

1 grad ,, ,, ,, র্ইানাইম'র Sod-মুণা ch'a, or ইইনাইম'নী'র Sod-মুণা күн ch'a.

төөth ,, ,, ,, ¬,, ¬л̄ŋ'ъъ Ğұа-сн'а от ¬л̄ŋ¬¬, ъъ Ğұа-сн'а.

Tong-ch'a, or 美口可。 Tong-ch'a, or 美口可。

²grd ,, ,, ,, 피ഖ기 중·미출학 Sum-ch'a nyi.

¾th ,, ,, ,, ,, বিউক্ত'সাধ্যুস Źнуг-сн'а sum.

As regards ½, there is a special expression, namely, খ্রীন্সা сн' È'-KA.

1½. may be rendered two ways: either স্ট্রান্সান্ত

Chi' dang ch'è'-ka, or 對方方下可多點 Ch'è' dang nyi, With a half, two. The latter is the commoner usage in the Colloquial.

 $3rac{1}{4}$ is rendered সাধ্যম'ন্দ'ন ও Sum dang źhyi-ch'a, or নাজ্যম'ন্দ'ন প্রি ঠিম্যা-ch'a sum dang źhyi, With $rac{3}{4}$ ths four.

अर्चे प्रशासमा मुन्य मा प्रति प्रश्न स्था मुन्य । The leader received one-tenth of the booty.

10.—Adverbial Cardinal Numbers.

Expressions like Once, Twice, Thrice, Four times, etc., are rendered by the word 충북 Tsʿar, or 회도자 Tʿeng, Time, followed by the desired cardinal number. Ex.:— 충북'피창피' Tsʿar-chi', or 회도자'피창피' Tʿeng-chi', Once; 충북'피창자' Tsʿar-ਲੱਖਾਂ, or 회도자'피창자' Tʿeng-ਲੱਖਾਂ Twice; 충북'피청자' Tsʿar-sum or 회도자'피청자' Tʿeng-sum, Thrice; 충북' 지형 Tsʿar-zhyi or 회도자'지형 Tʿeng-zhyi, Four times.

Another word with the same signification, as 5. T's AR and 2C T'ENG is 2C LÄN, but it is not so much used in the Colloquial.

Other expressions that may here be mentioned are:—

ANG: At once. Forthwith, Straightway, Immediately.

५५६८ मंडेन Da Rung ts'ar-chi': Once more.

「ন্ত্রের্মান্ট্রিমান্ট্রিমান্ট্রিমান্ট্রিমান্ট্রিমান্ট্রিমান্ট্রিমান্ট্রমান্ট

Ts'ER, A separate time or occasion, or instance.

黃式黃式 Ts'er ts'er, Many times, On separate occasions, Repeatedly.

भुना ऊँद Shud-Ts'er, A separate time or occasion.

র্ক্তমান্ত্রী Ts'ar mang-po: Many times.

ある。 TS'AR MANG-PO RANG (with negative): Not many times.

Once upon a time, or Once, or One day, referring either to the past or the future, may be rendered কুমাঠন (or মার্ব, or ম্বিনা) মার্বনা (ব্রিনা or ব্রিনা) চাঁট тѕ'ак (or как, or т'ємд) сні' (zнуї', or ѕні'); or ১৯৯৯ বিনা চাঁট-ке-zнуї, or ১৯৯৯ বিনা নি কি

11.—ADVERBIAL ORDINAL NUMBERS.

These are formed by adding $\overset{\sim}{\sim}$ RA, to the $\overset{\sim}{\sim}$ PO, or $\overset{\sim}{\sim}$ PA, of the ordinals. Ex.:—

55 ዃ፝ጜ ĎANG-POR: Firstly.

মান্ত্রম

স্থাইনাম্ম Tsag-chig-par: Twenty-one'thly (= Twenty-firstly.)

12.—DEFINITE AND INDEFINITE NUMERALS.

Among these may be classed the following:-

मार्डेश'मा' Nyi-KA, Both, e.g., वर्रेमार्डेश'मार्नेमार्डिश'मा' Both this and that.

মুন্দের Su-yang, Anybody; (with a negative) = None, Nobody.
নানাই Ga-Gai, Anything; (with a negative) = None, Nothing.

The Literary forms of সামাই GA-GAI, are সামেম GANG-YANG, and ইমেম CHI-YANG.

Another expression is স্ট্রামেন Chiá-yang, Even one; (with a negative)—None, Nobody, Nothing.

EXAMPLES.

मिं र्के ते दि दि देश शुः भिर्म हो तथा शुः । None of them arrived .

हा मिं र्के ते दि दि देश शुः भिर्म हो भिर्म हो । I know none of them .

भेर ।

उत्थमाने र्के दे निर्मित्यमामिते दिस None of these things will suit me. गुःसन्दे or दिस्सिंसन्दि।

प्रिनाकुराणादे प्राप्त समाजिना मीश्राध्य None, or neither of these two will do.

Expressions like A whole (something), An entire (something); A complete (something), A full (something), are rendered by 되었다. ĠANG-ĠA, 뭐다면 ĞANG-K'A, or simply 되다 ĠANG, or 뭐다 ĠANG: and the word 되었지 'CHI', one, or 중되'CHI', A, An, is not made use of at all in such cases. Ex.:—

ব্ধনা মি র্ক্তিমান্নামে (or স্ক্রমা) The soldiers are roasting a whole ox.

तर्भेष्ट्रीटामास्य ने**र्**।

This is not a complete story.

E'A'मार्शे' E'A'' मारमादार्भाषा Please give me a full cup of tea.

चित्रः।

रैश दे हिंम हिमान्दर देश रेर्।

Those accounts are not altogether (or entirely) accurate.

All, whole, entire, may also be rendered by 뭐지한 T'AM-CHÄ', 최도'된 Ts'ANG-MA, and 뭐다면 ĞANG-K'A, or 케디션 ĞANG-ĞA. Ex.:—

অম্সাম্বার্ক্সমার্ব্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ব্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সমার্ক্সম

भुक्षानुमन् ने प्रमण उन् लिन् सिंहः। All the women were frightened.

रे प्रमास उर् De T'am-cha', not रे के प्रमास उर् Den-tso T'am-cha': They all.

মান Gang, or সাম Gang, is also used in connection with weights and measures instead of স্টিমা, or উস্ Chi', One, A, An.

So also, in connection with weights and measures and the Tibetan monetary system, 5 Do, is used instead of 75 NYI, Two, and signifies $A \ couple$. Otherwise the word for $a \ couple$ is 5 Ch'A.

But a phrase like Two-legged, or Three-legged, is rendered with the particle \Box' , thus: $-\overline{\eta}\Box'\overline{\eta}\widetilde{\beta}\widetilde{\beta}'\Box'$ or $\overline{\eta}\Box'\widetilde{\beta}\widetilde{\beta}'\Box'$ Here \Box' means possessed of.

13.—Noun Substantives.

Ts'o, the Plural-sign used in the Colloquial, is never expressed, either in speech or in writing, after a numeral adjective, or numeral adjectives, the noun-substantive thereby qualified always remaining in the singular. Ex.:—

भ्रेमाशुम्भः (not भ्रेक्टिंमाशुमः) वित्तिः Three men will go with you.

14.—NOTATION BY LETTERS.

The use of the TRARATINAM DANG, or Alphabetical Enumeration, has already been explained (See § 26 II). In this connection, when references in Indices, or Registers, or to quotations from learned works are being cited, it is customary to qualify the numeral letter by affixes such as I'PA, IT PAR, and I'A' PA-LA, of which the first denotes the Book, Register, Index, or the like, to which reference is being made, and the last two denote that the particular quotation or citation is to be found in some particular Book, etc.

Ex.:-

র্ডিসমে T'o A-PA: Register No. 30.

র বি'বি'বার Po-ti k'a-par: In Volume No. 2.

র্নামামে T'o র্ন-PA-LA: In Index No. 3.

CHAPTER II.

ETYMOLOGY.

§ 27.—The Definite Article.

1. The Definite Article The (which is really only an abbreviation of That) is represented in Tibetan in various ways, the principal being the words $\mathbf{Q}^{\mathbf{S}}$. DI, and \mathbf{S} DE, of which the former is usually said to mean *This*, and the latter *That*.

Properly, 3 or 3 when used at all, should always follow the noun or adjective which it distinguishes.

As a rule it is only used when the distinguishing or demonstrative idea is intended to be conveyed.

EXAMPLES:-

As a matter of fact Tibetans altogether discard the article in conversation, unless they really desire to express the demonstrative or distinguishing idea.

EXAMPLES :--

री पिट मी दिन्य। The man is coming.

भे मुन्। Shut the door.

भे मुन्द से Open the window.

A distinction, however, in the use of $\mathbf{A}^{\mathbf{S}^*}$ and \mathbf{S}^* is made between the nearer and the remoter relation, in regard both to time and space.

For instance, when the article is intended to distinguish some person or thing already referred to, but to whom or to which reference is again being made, then, on the occasion of the second or any subsequent reference. Tibetans use $\hat{5}$. DE; $\hat{5}$ DI having been used on the occasion of the first reference.

EXAMPLE :-

भ्र.र्-भ्रेयशःवैदः।

The man has arrived (referring to somebody already mentioned).

Notice also how $3\overline{5}$ and $\overline{5}$ are used in a phrase like this :—

ন্ত্ৰী'ন্থা (or নি'ৰ্মান') আমেশসাম্ব This is the messenger who came yesterday.

(N.B.—주왕왕 yesterday, is Colloquial, 주장자 is Literary).

So, if on the occasion of the first reference, the object distinguished was a distant object, then $\tilde{\mathbf{5}}$ would be used; $\mathbf{6}$ being employed to distinguish a near or present object. Ex.:—

ই নিহা'হা' (or নিহা'ন) ইনিহা'নান্ত্ৰ

That man (referring to somebody at a distance) is the messenger who came yesterday.

When, moreover, the article distinguishes first one and then another of two objects, both of which are present, and which are being contrasted, or to which an alternative reference is being made, then, in the case of the one, $\Im \tilde{\Im}$ would be used, and, in the case of the other, $\Im \tilde{\Im}$ Ex.:—

মি'বের্নি'ম'র্বাঘার্ম'র্বি'মিনি'

This man cannot go, but that man can go (will go).

Practically, therefore, in addition to representing the article The, 35 and 5 respectively also represent the distinguishing adjectives This and That. They also respectively represent This one and That one; He, she, it.

PLURAL.

The Colloquial plural of $\mathcal{A}_{\overline{\gamma}}^{\overline{\gamma}}$ is $\mathcal{A}_{\overline{\gamma}}^{\overline{\gamma}}$ (pronounced Din-ts'o),

The, These, They: and that of $\overline{\gamma}$ is $\overline{\gamma}^{\overline{\gamma}}$ (pronounced Den-ts'o)

The, Those, They.

Both articles, however, are often used in the singular to distinguish collective nouns. In such cases they precede the word they distinguish. Ex.:—

८ र्ने:मार्युक्ष।	These three
रेखा -	$Those\ five.$
৭ই ব্যশ্ব	$All\ these.$
रे:क्षरम्।	All those.

The following is Literary:—
নাধুদেইশাুর ইয়ারাম নিক্রুবের্বর্ম All these sayings pleased greatly.
দ্বিশান্ত্রুদে ।

Where a plural noun is qualified by an adjective, and the whole is distinguished by the article, it is the article which takes the plural sign Ts'o, and it is the Twich takes whatever case-sign there may be.

Ex.:-

2. Another method by which the Definite Article is represented is by using the particle $\tilde{\beta}$. NI; but this is rather Literary than Colloquial. In a long and involved sentence it may be placed after the principal noun, or noun-phrase, so as to distinguish it prominently. It may also be used to emphasize a particular word or expression, and may even be employed in addition to $3\tilde{\beta}$ or $\tilde{\beta}$.

Ex.:--

र समें निष्ठ मानेश है।

The twelve ra-gos (or ra-heads).

भु.यु.शुश्रमस.१४४.गीय.जशासिट.री.एत्त्रचीश।

Mankind are the noblest of all animals.

यगाय दे दे दे ग्रेंद अर्केम द्राप्त अरु स

And the word was with God (John i. 1.)

- 3. The functions of the Definite Article are sometimes performed by the particles ∇ PA and ∇ PO, when affixed to numerals. (See § 26, Notes 6, 8, 14.)
- 4. The particles $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ PO, $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ PA, $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ K'A, etc., as performing the function of the Definite Article in connection also with nouns and adjectives, are used when the idea of individuality, or definiteness, is particularly desired. Thus, $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ The great king. But they are also sometimes discarded. Thus, $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}\widetilde{$

ع:ھَ2.1

Great and small.

श्ची ना ना नही।

Birth, Old age, Sickness, Death.

The conjunction $5^{\text{C'}}$ Dang, And, is also discarded in such expressions.

The particles under notice and conjunctions are also discarded in enumerations of nouns that are in apposition or contrast. Ex.:—

ইন্সা Hope and Fear.

र्मोः श्रेमा Virtue and Vice.

শাব্দাকা Heaven and Earth.

In a sentence like $\mathfrak{R}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}$ (otherwise $\mathfrak{R}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}$) The pillar of hope, the particle is omitted from the first noun, $\mathfrak{R}^{\bullet}\mathfrak{A}^{\bullet}$ Re-wa, and annexed only to the second.

Sometimes however a phrase is contracted and the particle omitted in both its members. Ex.: $\widehat{\Xi}$ 'T' The pillar of hope.

5. The student may also be reminded of the various affixes set out at the end of § 24, since they too occasionally perform the functions of the Definite Article.

\S 28.—The Indefinite Article.

1. উল্' A, An, Some, is a modification of স্টিল্ One, and is seen in the following forms, which may be used even in the Colloquial, if it is desired to be very correct, though as a matter of fact the form উল্' Chr' is the one most favoured:—

উনা after final না, ন, or ন। জ্না after all vowels, or after final ম, ন, ম, ম, তা মা

2. Being an adjective when it qualifies a noun, and an adverb when it qualifies an adjective, its place in the sentence is immediately after the noun, or noun and adjective, that it qualifies. Ex.:—

র বিনা (or উনা)।

A horse.

A virtuous man.

इ उना ব্দে বিশ্ব বি

- 3. $\Im \eta$ and not the noun or adjective to which it is annnexed, takes the case-sign, but only in what we would call the Nominative. In the other cases $\Im \eta$ is usually dropped. Ex.:—
- ५ वित्रसर्वर वे जिना मीश्रादार्स दे मान्नदा A strange horse has eaten our hay.

८ मार्डट में दे दिन्स्स यान्यून जी चेंद्र । I live near a large river.

4. Annexed to approximate numerals, it signifies collectiveness.

Thus:—

য়'নাধ্যম'নজ্'জ্না।

A group of three or four men.

र्भनाःसरःह्रिटःस्नाःनाडेनाःमानुशः येना।

A force of one or two thousand soldiers.

Another expression for Some is A.A. K'A-SHÄ, and another is $5\overline{7}$ Tod-TSE.

The Literary form of A.A. is A.A. A. GA.ZHYI'.

- A few, Solely, Only, Alone, may be rendered in Colloquial by বৃশ্ই Tog-tse, পৃশ্বা Sha-ĭa', and নাইনামি Chig-po; and in Literature by ব্রব্'ব্না Bম-źнүা'.
- 6. Affixed to Interrogative Pronouns, the Article signifies (in Literary Tibetan) Whoever, Whatever, Whichever, Anyone, Anything. Thus:—

शुः विमा युँ शः प्राप्त : क्षेत्राः प्राप्त : कार्यः । स्राप्त : कार्यः । स्राप्त : कार्यः । स्राप्त : कार्यः ।

Whoever with loving eyes should even regard, etc. (S.C.D.), i.e. anyone who, etc.

देव, बट.ज.चाट. बुचा. (or कु.बुचा.) थ्रु.

There is nothing (anything, with negative) in it.

The Article is also used thus in Literature:-

चाट. बुचा. चि. श्रुष्ट, गुेष. गुेश।

On account of some law-suit.

रुन्नाः रुन्निश

What (is it) wanted for?

উ'জ্বিশাৰ।

Once, on some occasion, some time.

रु.ब्रिमा बरा।

After a little, some time afterwards.

7. Affixed in any of its appropriate forms to a verbal root, it imports in Literature the Imperative Mood as addressed to servants and inferiors, and also the Hortative and Optative Moods. Thus:—

In the Colloquial also it is frequently used to express an emphatic order, and commonly takes the form ব্লা Shi', though it would be more correct to say ব্লা Shi', ব্লা Zhyi', or ইলা Chi', according to rule. Ex:—

8. Here may also be mentioned न्याप्य Any. Ex.:—

বিংশ্বিস্কানাম্য নামের আর্মির্ম্বারা Is there any fresh news to-day?

§ 29.—The Noun.

A.—Structure.

- The Tibetan Noun ends in either a consonant or a vowel, and is either:—
 - (a) A Monosyllable without any affixed particle, and either without or with any vowel-sign, head-letter, subjunct or prefix. Ex.:—
 - * Fish; 된 End; A Mountain pass; 의 Flesh; 지 Earth, soil, ground, place; 회 Man; 된 Fire; 전 Water; 및 Bird, fowl; 된데; Head: 젊 Door; 의 Deer; 됐 Wound;

ম' Year; মু Food, provisions; বৃত্তু Head (Honorific); মু Hair (Human, on head).

Sometimes, however, the particle does not indicate gender. Ex.:— 됐지 A mountain-shrub; 형태 Day, sun; 두데드랜 Evening; 됐게 Monk, priest; 독대 Music; 뭐도와 A kind of tree; 뭐가 Ba-wa, Goitre: 키주가 Pledge: 평택 Envelope, wrapper.

Sometimes the particle serves merely to differentiate the meanings of roots otherwise similarly or somewhat similarly spelt. Ex.:—

ইব্'ম' To show, to teach: but ইব্'ম' Autumn; দ্ম' Marrow, pith, descent, origin; but দ্মম' Foot; স্ইম' Confidence; but স্মম্মা

If the particle is either \mathfrak{I}' , \mathfrak{I}' , or \mathfrak{I}' , or \mathfrak{I}' , it may be and often is dropped (especially when followed by an adjective), without affecting the meaning of the word. Ex.:—

मूद्रा केंद्र में | मूद्र केंद्र The or a great elephant. मूद्र केंद्र में प्रति | मुक्ष केंद्र पति The four great kings.

Some of such particles perform the functions of DIMINUTIVES.

Thus, in the ease of 3, the inherent W, or W, of the final or the

only consonant of the noun, is turned into W, and is followed by the particle. Ex.:—

3. Fish; 33. Little fish; I Cow; IG Calf.

In other cases the final consonant, if a $\exists \uparrow$, is cut off the noun, and turned into a second syllable, to which $\acute{Z}hyab$ -kyu is added. Ex.:—

धुना Hand; धुना Little hand; धुना Child; धुना Little child; धुना Sheep: भुना Lamb.

In other cases the Diminutive particle is simply added to the primitive noun as it stands. Ex.:— $\overline{\mathbb{A}}$ Man: $\overline{\mathbb{A}}$ Mannikin; $\overline{\mathbb{A}}$ Sack: $\overline{\mathbb{A}}$ Sacklet.

Another way of expressing the Diminutive is to qualify the noun by the adjective $\mathbf{\xi} \mathbf{\Gamma}^*$ Small. Ex.:—

ম্পূর্দেত্র A little inn.

A little mind, narrow mind.

Or lastly-

(c) A DISSYLLABLE, OR EVEN A POLYSYLLABLE, either without or with a particle. Those nouns, and especially the polysyllabic nouns, which are mostly proper names, and sometimes even amount to phrases, are often comparatively modern words which have either gradually developed or been deliberately compounded out of originally simple elements. Ex.:—

N.B.—Words with the definite particles $\vec{\zeta}$, $\vec{\zeta}$, etc., are generally used without the article $\vec{\zeta}$, or $\vec{\zeta}$, unless the latter is intended to express This or That.

2. Besides the particles above referred to, mention may be made of SIFS K'AN, which, annexed to substantives or verbal roots, is extensively used in the Colloquial to signify a person who, in some capacity or character, is connected with some particular act, state, or thing. Ex.:—

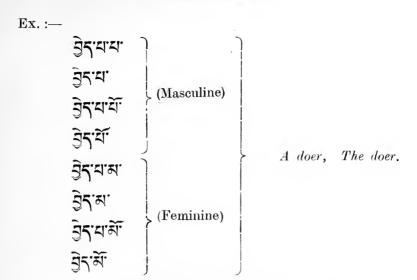
মানর Guard: নুমান্যন্দর Liar: মান্যন্দর Liar: মান্যন্দর Murderer: মান্যন্দর

In book-language the following may be found: -

নাম আমর Dancer: মামানামর Guide: দ্রীমানুর Flutist; মামানুর Violinist, harpist: নীমানুর Joiner, carpenter: নানু আমার Bow-maker; মানুর Artisan, worker: মামানুর Peasant, agriculturist, raïat.

Such compounds in $\overline{A}|\overline{A}\overline{A}$ (at least in the Literary language) may take the indicative particles \overline{A} , \overline{A} , \overline{A} , or $\overline{\overline{A}}$, as expressive not only of the definite or indefinite article but also of gender. Ex.:—

3. Instead of 자戸ず use is sometimes made of the verb うちば To do.



Sometimes, even in the Colloquial, both $\Im 5$ and $\Im 5$ are used together, either with or without the Indicative Particles $\Im 5$, $\Im 5$, $\Im 5$, though in the Colloquial these are commonly discarded. Ex.:—

 소취 경치자
 (Common)

 소취 경치자
 (Masculine)

 소취 경치자
 (Masculine)

 소취 경치자
 (Feminine)

 소취 경치자
 (Feminine)

N.B.—When $abla \hat{5}$, or $\hat{5}$ or the indefinite article $\hat{5}$ $\hat{7}$ is used with any of the above, the indicative particle is discarded, e.g.:—

নূর্ন্ট্রন্সামন্ট্র The walker, That walker.
নূর্ন্ট্রন্সামন্ট্রন্ A walker.

COLLOQUIAL.

র্মান্ত্রম্বান্ত্র Agriculturist, Farmer. অমান্ত্র্বান্ত্রি সামান্ত্র Guide. দিশ্ব'ট্রিব'শাবর Guarantor. ইনাম'ট্রব'শাবর Helper.

4. §5, however, is not the only auxiliary that takes the affix xxx in this way. There are others; for instance, 57 Ex.:—

র্ম্বির্মান্তর Arguer, Reasoner.

দেশনুব্র্বান্তমান্তর Roarer.

हेना ইন্ব্রিনান্তমান্তর Briber.

ইমান্ত্রানান্তমান্তর Calculator.

In fact, the functions of $\mathbb{N}[\mathbb{N}]$, \mathbb{N} , and \mathbb{N} in this respect, are very similar to those of the Urdu word \mathbb{N} , $w\bar{a}l\bar{a}$, or the Persian words words \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} \mathbb{N} in words like \mathbb{N} in words like \mathbb{N} $\mathbb{N$

5. Another common affix of a similar nature annexed to nounsubstantives is $\overrightarrow{AB}.\overrightarrow{A}$, or \overrightarrow{AB} Maker, Manufacturer, etc. Ex.:—

Boot-maker

বিশ্বের্রান

Carpenter

বাহাম্মান্রান

Goldsmith

Silversmith

ENINA

Coppersmith

6. Abstract Nouns.

In Literary Tibetan abstract nouns are formed by adding \$5.55 NYI', to the adjective in its full form, that is, not the mere root, but the root plus one of the indicative particles. Ex.:—

점 Easy, but 됩고경 Easiness, facility.

기지 Difficult, but 기지 기계 Difficulty.

되지 Free, but 되지기 경기 Freedom.

다시 True, but 디렉턴 기계 Truth.

기계 Young, but 기계 기계 Youth.

최기 Black, but 국기기 경기 Blackness.

최기 Mad, but 필급기기 기계 Madness, Lunacy.

정기 Tedious, but 정기기 경기 Tedium.

B.—Inflexion.

The Tibetan Noun-Substantive is inflected in relation to:—
1.—Gender.

The names of all males, females and inanimate objects are naturally

masculine, feminine, and common respectively, e.g., \Re Man (m.); \Re \Im Woman (f.); \Re Stone (c.).

মুখ Pupil or novice in a monastery.

ন্ত্ৰীম'ম' King, Regent, Temporal Ruler, Rajah.

रुंद्रें or द्वेंद्रं Horse.

यम् र्चे or र्चे यम् Hog.

र्शेन्द्रादः Bull.

र्येन्यभग Bull-yak.

र्भें 5 Stallion.

र्थे यम् Boar.

いせ Father.

ড়াইটি This old chap; I myself.

স্ত্র্যুঁ Official chief.

まず Grandson.

But sometimes nouns in \mathfrak{I}^* or \mathfrak{I}^* or \mathfrak{I}^* or \mathfrak{I}^* are common. Ex.:—

নাউমার্থ্য ব্রমমার্থ্য বিশ্বমার্থ্য বিশ্বমার্থ্য Beloved, Sweetheart, Lover.

র্টমর্ন্ট্র $\left. egin{cases} Basket. \end{cases}
ight.$

왕학자 Patch.

त्नुभया Traveller.

নাধান্দ্র: Secret.

न्याभागाः Servant.

ম'ন' Liquid.

η'ς Leather.

I'T' Bitter buck-wheat.

Nouns with N affixed, or with N affixed or prefixed are generally feminine. Ex.:—

र्में र Mare.

ড়ো'ড়া' Mother.

ବ୍ୟ'5'ଅ' Maidservant.

ধূলাইনি Tigress.

রু:ইমি Daughter, girl.

[5]'된 \cdot $ig(egin{array}{ccc} Bitch. \end{array}$

ಕೆ: Fi Niece. .

But 51' and 51' do not always denote the feminine gender. Ex.:-

ম'ম' Leaf.
হান্তম' Lotus.
নান্তম' Beam of wood.
মান্তম' Bean.
নিন্তম' Breeches, pants.
মান্তম' Spoon.
মান্তম' Shovel, spade.
নান্তম' Ant.

ইব্রন্থ Sport, game, play.
ন্যুন্থ Chūmbi.
ন্যুন্থ মি Friend.
ব্রুন্থ মি Evening.
ম্মার্ন্থ Music, cymbals.
শ্বেন্থ মি Fun.
শ্বিন্থ মি Grouse.
নাইনামি Hedgehog.

মিন্দু ম' Hawk, kite. বুমার্ম Knee.

Masculine nouns may be turned into feminine nouns by substituting a feminine affix for a masculine one. Ex.:—

및 지기 A man of Lhasa.

র্ন্য An Indian.

TTST A Tibetan.

र्जु दिना य' or र्जु 'शे' A Chinaman.

ব্যাম A Nepāli.

মু'মার্ম' A woman of Lhasa.

मृ प्रदेश A woman of India.

ইইই A woman of Tibet.

मुंजिमा से or मुं से A woman of China.

সমার্থী A Nepāli woman.

2.—Number

- (a) There are several signs in Tibetan denoting the plural number, e.g.—
- T'so. This is the sign commonly used now in the Colloquial with any kind of noun or adjective.
- (b) ইমহা NAM. This is Literary, and is seldom if ever heard in the Colloquial. It is largely used, for instance, in the Tibetan translation of the New Testament. ইহাম্ম is used when

- (c) 첫막 ĎA'. This is an elegant substitute for 축정자]
- (d) 3되 Cha'. Another book term. Used also in Sikhim and Būtān with personal pronouns, e.g. 도'3되 We, etc.
- (e) No plural sign at all need be used when, from the context, it is clear that the plural number is implied. In such cases the noun remains in the singular number. Ex.:—

- (f) When, however, the plural sign is expressly used, it, and not the noun, nor the adjective, if any, takes the case-sign. Ex.:—
 মানামান্তি কিমান্ত্রিমান্ত্
- (g) When expressly used, the plural sign comes after the noun if there is no adjective and no article, definite or indefinite. Ex.:—

रुषानुष्य के के अमें भेर महिंद अपन्य रेर्। Men were deceivers ever.

(h) When there is only an adjective after the noun, the plural sign is annexed to the adjective, not to the noun. Ex.:—

মি'ন্রহ'র্ন Good men.

(i) If, however, the adjective be used as an attribute predicated of the noun, then the plural sign is annexed to the noun, not to the adjective. Ex.:—

भिर्द्धः प्रभार में दें। The men are good.

(k) If the noun be distinguished by an article, or distinguished by an article and also qualified by an adjective, the plural sign is annexed to the article.

Ex.:--

화역한 The or these men.

한국 경기 The or those men.

한국로 한국 한국 The or these good men.

한국로 한국 한국 기계 The or those good men.

The or those good men.

भेरिकें वडा घेरिन्न। Those men are good.

3.—CASE.

By way of supplementing what has already been said on this subject in $\S 25$, examples are now given of the Declension of Nouns ending in (1) a vowel, (2) final consonants \P' or Ξ' ; \S' , Ξ' or Ξ' ; and \S' , Ξ' or Ξ'

The particular postpositions given are, of course, only examples out of many that might be used.

I.—Noun ending in a Vowel.

(i) Singular.

র ব Month, or Moon.

Nom. Voc. Acc. Month.

Gen. = TAR' or T'W' Of month.

Agent. 클디티 or 그'따라 By month.

Dat. π To month, or moon.

Loc. 3.5 On moon.

Per. Fig. In or during month.

Mod. = = = = On account of moon or month.

Abl. 클디지의 Than month or moon.

PLURAL.

ন্ত্ৰী সাই Months, Moons.

Nom. Voc. Months, Moons. নুষার্ক্তবিং or র্ক্তেম Of months, Of moons. Gen. ক্র'ন'র্ক' or র্কিন্ট্রা By months, By moons. Agent. ₹.4.%... Dat. To months, To moons. ন্ত্ৰবাৰ্ক্তৰ Loc. On moons. শ্রু:ব:স্ক্রু:ঝ: In or during months. Per. ন্ত্র'ব'র্ক্টব্'ন্ট্রব্'র্ন্ট্রঝ' On account of moons or months. Mod. <u>খ্র</u>.ঘ.সূ.্রপ্র Than months or moons. Abl.

Until months: as far as moons.

(ii) Similar with Definite Article.

শ্রু-ম-র্ক্ররি-মহ-ন্

Term.

SINGULAR.

ষ্টিকা Sun or Day.

$\left. egin{array}{l} ext{Nom.} \\ ext{Voe.} \\ ext{Acc.} \end{array} ight\}$	कें सप्	The sun or the day.
Gen.	3° 51' 12 5 6 '	Of the sun or day.
Agent.	ঈ' শ্বন্থ	By the sun or day.
Dat.	^{કુ.} સ [.] વર્ <u>-</u> તા	To the sun or day.
Loc.	જે.લાવદુઃવ	On the sun .
Per.	^{જુ} સત્તરે ન	During the day.
Mod.	^ৡ ॱয় ৾৻ ঽ৾৾৾৾ ৲ ৢ৾৾৲	With the sun or day.
Abl.	³ , ध.८১, जश्	Than the sun or day.
Term.	ৡ.য়.৴৴৴৴ <u>ৢ৾৴</u> ৣয়য়৻৸.	Towards the sun.

N.B.—In Colloquial the Definite Article is as a matter of fact seldom used.

PLURAL.

কুমান্দ্রই The suns or days.

$\left. egin{array}{l} \operatorname{Nom.} \\ \operatorname{Voc.} \\ \operatorname{Acc.} \end{array} \right\}$	ঈ য় ঀ ৼ৾৾৾	The suns or days.
Gen.	^{કુ} સત્તર્જે કે વે	Of the suns or days.
Agent.	^{કુ} સ' ५ રે કેંક	By the suns or days.
Dat.	केसदिर्देश	To the suns or days.
Loc.	 ঈস'দেই র্ক্তর্	On the suns or days.
Per.	ঈ 'ম'ন্ ই'র্ম'ন	In or during the days.
Mod.	ৡ [৽] য়'ঀ৾৾৾ৼ৾ <i>য়</i> ৾ৼ	With the suns or days.
Abl.	^{કુ.} સ.તર્ <u>રે.જૂ.</u>	Than the suns or days.
Term.	कें साम्द्री कें दश	From the suns or days.

(iii)—Similar with Indefinite Article.

५मोंद्र'दा'विमा A monastery.

$\left. egin{array}{l} \operatorname{Nom.} \\ \operatorname{Voc.} \\ \operatorname{Acc.} \end{array} \right\}$	न र्नोब्र-सःबिषाः	$A\ monastery.$
Gen.	न्त्रींब रा विमानी	Of a monastery.
Agent.	न्त्रोंब.स.ब्रेमा.च्रेश.	By a monastery.
Dat.	न्मूब्रस्विमास	To a monastery.
Loc.	न्मिन य'दिमा थ	In a monastery.
Per.	(Not used).	(Not used).
Mod.	न्मूब्रस्वनान्दरं	With a monastery.
Abl.	न्नोंद्र य हिमा सहा	Than a monastery.
Term.	नम्बिन्यः विमा बुद्धाः	From a monastery.

N.B.—In conversation ইনা, ব্না, and ব্না, in this sense is usually dropped in all cases except the Nominative, or Agentive.

(iv)—Similar with a higher Numeral.

$\left. egin{array}{l} \operatorname{Nom.} \\ \operatorname{Voc.} \\ \operatorname{Acc.} \end{array} \right\}$	चॅ ७ मर्न	Seven angels.
Gen.	ইন্. ক. বৰ্ম কুটি.	Of seven angels.
Agent.	<i>ই গু-</i> ম্নুধ-শ্ৰীশ	By seven angels.
Dat.	<i>ই পূ</i> ন্ব কুম	To seven angels.
	etc., etc	e.

$\left. egin{array}{l} \mathbf{Nom.} \\ \mathbf{Voe.} \\ \mathbf{Acc.} \end{array} ight\}$	र्थे अपनु ब र्घे	The seven angels.
Gen.	र्थे अपनुक्ये वि	Of the seven angels.
Agent.	र्थे अपनुक्रीक्	By the seven angels.
Dat.	विष्यपुर्विष्यः	To the seven angels.
	etc., etc.	

(vi) The same in the Singular with Cardinal.

$\left. egin{array}{l} \operatorname{Nom.} \\ \operatorname{Voc.} \\ \operatorname{Acc.} \end{array} \right\}$	र्थे % वर्ष	The seventh angel.
Gen.	र्थे अपनुब्धित	Of the seventh angel.
Agent.	स्रुन्द्र्	By the seventh angel.
Dat.	में ३ नर् दराया	To the seventh angel
	etc.,	etc.

(vii) Similar with Definite Article.

$\left. egin{array}{l} \operatorname{Nom.} \\ \operatorname{Voc.} \\ \operatorname{Acc.} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>वें ३</i> द्रायें दरे	The first angel.
Gen.	यॅ.३:५८ <u>.त</u> ्त्रं	Oj the first angel.
CXCII.	17 1, 1, 1, 1	, , ,

र्थे अर्दर से विदेश Agent. By the first angel. र्थे अन्दर्भे ता To the first angel. Dat. etc.. etc.

(viii) When, as is sometimes the case, the adjective precedes the noun, the former must be put in the genitive case, and the case-sign must be attached to the noun, or to the definite or indefinite article, if any, or to the plural sign, if any. Ex.:-

> Mal. 5 5.32. \$E. Good behaviour. শন্মের বিত্রিব শ্বর্থ From good behaviour. यमार्गे दे नेर्न्धूरस्य दर्शः By this good behaviour. यमा से दे त्यसगा विमामीस By a good deed. यमार्चे दे त्यसमार्के त्यः To good deeds. थमा से दे त्यक्ष गा दे के ता To those good deeds.

II.—Noun ending in A, or K'

리피 Sheep. Nom. Voc. Sheep. ম্রদাসী Gen. Of the sheep. By the sheep. Agent. থেমামে. Dat. To the sheep. etc., etc. Ar Tree. Nom. Voc. Tree. Acc.Gen. Of the tree. এই শীশ্বা By the tree. Agent. Dat. To the tree.

etc..

etc.

III.—Noun ending in 5, 5 or 81

న్స్ Tibet ; వేనా Delegate ; వెన్స్ Costume.

Declined like any other noun, save that the genitive sign is \mathfrak{I} and the agentive sign is \mathfrak{I}

IV.—Noun ending in 5, 5, 5 or 21

र्ने सामन Buyer; झुझ Boot; मूँ दिन्द City; हें सिन Coal.

Declined like any other noun, save that the genitive sign is T, and the agentive sign is T, and that in Colloquial it is allowable to pronounce all these signs T, and

§ 30.—THE ADJECTIVE.

I.—Form and Place.

(i) There is little or no structural difference between the noun and the adjective. In fact, the latter may, for the most part, be regarded merely as a noun performing qualifying functions with respect to some other noun or verbal substantive.

As a rule the adjective follows the noun, and then it is the adjective and not the noun which takes the case-sign. If the adjective is distinguished by a following article, definite or indefinite, or a demonstrative pronoun, it is the article or the pronoun and not the adjective which takes the case-sign. So, the adjective, and not the noun, takes the sign of the plural, if there is no article or demonstrative pronoun. If there is, the article or pronoun takes the sign.

If, as is sometimes the case, the adjective precedes the noun, the adjective is put in the genitive case, and the case-sign is annexed to the noun, or to the article, if any, or to the plural sign, if any.

EXAMPLES:-

बिसेन्नार्ये देश हैं हैं दग्रहारें (बिना) That black cat saw a white mouse.

निःसी नमार्थेका से सि हैं हैं हैन हैन या देता

The black cat has caught the mouse.

White leopards are uncommon.

These white leopards are valuable.

These beautiful white beasts of prey kill other wild animals.

Those crimson clouds are very beautiful.

(ii) A very common practice in Colloquial is to turn what we would call a relative clause into an adjectival phrase. Ex.:—

स्थर्भान्य स्थान स्थान

The man who killed the wolf. Literally, the wolf-killing man.

भ्राप्तराश्चित्रामु श्चित्रामु रहे or भ्राप्तस्तर

The wolf that killed the man.

मार्शेर्'साम्बर्'मी'से'रे', or से'मार्शेर्' The man who kills.

বশ্ব-শ্ৰাম্প্ৰ-নী-শ্ৰ-নী-শ্ৰ-নি-শ্ৰাম্প্ৰ-নী-শ্ৰ-নি-শ্ৰ

The man who killed.

नसर्यदेशेरे, or सेनसर्यरे।

The man who was killed.

This can be done, of course, even as things are; nevertheless it remains a fact that, in Colloquial, \(\Pi\)\(\Pi\

See § 31, IX, A, on the use of the different roots of the auxiliary verb 3574 To do, for the purpose of distinguishing the Active from the Passive Voice.

(iv) The Relative Idea is also frequently expressed by turning a participial clause into an adjectival phrase. Ex.:—

केर क्षेत्र त्रे सु मुझ माट नुद नुद अ र्थेट A growing child (a child that is growing) will eat anything it gets.

দ্রাম্বা (or Literary দ্রাম্বা) ট্রিন্ The man whom you sent yesterday is dead. Literally, The yesterday day-by-you-sent man is dead.

The participle, being here an adjective, may also follow the noun. Thus:—

| F' N に) うずい N で man, etc.

Now, let another adjective be inserted, thus:—

[য়য়য়ড়ৢ৾৾ঽ৽ঢ়ৢ৾য়৽য়ৢঢ়ৼয়ঢ়৽য়৽য়য়য়ঢ়৽য়৽ ঽ৽ঀ৽য়৾ঢ়৽।

The good man whom you sent yesterday is dead.

Or thus :--

[파·씨도] [중국] 'ŋ씨' 최' ㅋㅋ도 ' 디 ' The good man, etc. 음' 경' ऑ도 1

The negative is inserted thus:—

मि:श्राम्त्रं गुैश्रास न्द्रम्। विदेशिक्षेट प्रमा

The good man whom you did not send yesterday is dead.

(v) Use of the Particles 각, 찬, 자, 자, 자,

If we desired to be very correct as regards the particles annexed to adjectival roots, we would use $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$, or \mathfrak{A} , with a masculine noun, and $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$, with a feminine noun; \mathfrak{A} , being more properly employed with the Indefinite Article, and $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$, with the Definite Article, when masculine nouns are concerned; while $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$, may be used with either the Indefinite or the Definite Article when the noun is feminine. In common parlance $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ is often pronounced pu.

Ex.:—

Baniti A black dog

Bitianiti A or the black bitch.

Fitianiti The white horse fitianiti A or the white mare.

But, as a matter of fact, these distinctions are not observed Colloquially, and a Tibetan would express himself thus:—

However, there are many adjectives which, even in Colloquial, are seen in A and A without reference to gender. Ex.:—

श्चेंद्रायः	Mad, $insane$.	क्रॅब्स.	Wet.
र्नेश्यः	Necessary, needful.	ম'ব্না'ন'	Wrong, incorrect.
चोशर.दा.	New.	ರ್ಷ.ಚ.	All.
क्रेट.रा.	Old.	ব্ টুশ্নস	Ordinary, vulgar.
चबिंद्र-दाः	Young.	<u>ह</u> ैश.श.	Sham.

There are also one or two seen in $\widetilde{\mathfrak{S}^{\prime}}$ without reference to gender. Ex.:—

In the Literary language the adjective, in its root form alone, is often seen immediately preceding the noun. Ex.:—

So, when the adjective has a particle and precedes the noun, Literary Tibetan follows the same rule as obtains in the Colloquial, of putting the adjective in the genitive case. Ex.:—

यम्।त्रे.ष्ट्रि.	$A\ black\ dog.$
बमार्चेदे हिं	$The \ black \ dog.$
नमार्के दे हैं कें	A or the black bitch.

But even in the Colloquial it is allowable, for brevity's sake, to form adjectival expressions by placing before a noun an adjective minus its particle. Ex.:—

प्रति स्थान क्षेत्र क

Instead of:-

So also :—

र्श्वेन भार्चेन भुष्ठा भुष्ठा विना नेन । Formerly Tibet was a secret (or hidden) country.

Instead of :-

स्वास्त्रे स्थास्त्र स्थास्य (or

Formerly Tibet, etc.

(vi) Adjectives are also sometimes formed from nouns and post-positions, the latter being put in the genitive case, and the whole expression made to precede the noun that it qualifies. Ex.:—

শ্ব-শ্বী-শ্বী-নে বিশ্বনা ক্র বিশা বর্ত্ত প্রেম-মে । শ্বন্ধ শ্বী-শ্বি-শ্বা-শ্বনা ক্র বিশা বর্ত্ত প্রেম-মে

Some time ago a European soldier was living **i**n Tibet.

८२५। इ.५.२ग्रेज.यश्चायःचश्चर्यःसरः ८२५।

Some of the many great ancient empires are still remembered.

बि.श.परेश.हे.ची. (or हि.पे.) क्.ड्रेंट.

The cat has broken the stone jug.

द्यायदायादेते. or लामीयासेटासेटासे

I live (or have a dwelling place) in an upper room of that house.

The adjectives to which attention is drawn in the foregoing illustrations are, in the first \mathcal{Z} \mathcal{Z} \mathcal{Z} \mathcal{Z} \mathcal{Z} in the second, \mathcal{Z} \mathcal{Z}

(vii) Some adjectives consist merely of a primitive repeated. Ex.:—

(viii) Others consist of two primitives, similar as regards their consonantal form, but with different vowels. Ex.:—

지지 ' Note of the series of th

(ix) Or of a repeated dissyllable with a difference in the vowels. Ex.:—

(x) Or of two different dissyllables in juxtaposition. Ex.:—

るでも、

Raving.

(xi) Or of two different monosyllables in juxtaposition. Ex.:-

되지 : Far, distant, remote.

독대 : 독대 : All : All

(xii) As to the formation of Abstract Nouns from adjectives, see § 29, A. 6.

(xiii) English adjectives ending in able and ible are usually rendered in Colloquial Tibetan by 35, NYAN, or 57 CH'o', or 575 CH'o', added to the root of the verb. Ex.:—

प्रभागायि देश स्ट्रिया भाषा or स्ट्रियां Is this road passable?

प्रमाश प्रामा ने प्रमा के किया or व्रमा

No, the road is not passable.

क्रिमा से त्रुम। सम्मा कुमा कु त्रे स्माय क्रिमा स्मार । सम्मा कुमा कुमा क्रिमा क्रिमा स्मार । सम्मा क्रिमा क्रिमा क्रिमा स्मार ।

মির্দ্রামান্য Is this stream fordable?

No, the stream is not fordable.

मe is ready to go.

ERSTSER JE 34 REAL This tea is very drinkable.

That pastry is not eatable.

These goods are not saleable.

God is invisible.

God is knowable.

र्गोदः सळ्याः देः योदः स्रोतः स्रोतः प्रचा। रागोदः सळ्याः देः सर्वेदः रेख्याः स्रोतः प्रचा। रागोदः सळ्याः देः सर्वेदः रेख्याः स्रोतः प्रचा। स्रोतः सळ्याः देः सर्वेदः स्रोतः स्रोतः प्रचा।

(xiv) The Literary equivalent of $\widetilde{\mathfrak{F}}$, or \mathfrak{H} , is \mathfrak{H} Rungway, or \mathfrak{H} . Rung. Ex.:—

न्द्रिंदिर्देश्व हैन्स् सुंद्रित्ते or द्वार

This spectacle is terrible, or calculated to terrify.

E'文'只要にている すべず、or まに南本文 This tea is not drinkable, or fit to drink.

রমান্দ্রিনামান্দ্র কার্মান্দ্র This food is not eatable, or fit to eat.

Sometimes, however, the supinal particle &, or , attached to the verbal root, is omitted, and the particle T after & is also dropped. Ex.:—

व्दःर्शेष्ट्रित्देग्रास्ट्राःट्रा

This sight is terrible.

हारी त्यूटा दुष्टा मी सारीर or त्यूटा से

That tea is undrinkable.

35.4.51

बर्ग पर्दे बार्ड टामी सारेद or बारी दुटा य:रेर।

This food is uneatable.

(xv) Where a noun is qualified by two or more adjectives joined by the conjunction and, or or, the construction is as follows:—

क्षे र अना से दर हुना से (or केना से) र्ह्मे दः अना सं दर सूना सं (or हेना सं) कें। श्रामाश्रमायवि।

Good and bad (addled)

Three or four men.

(xvi) NEGATIVE ADJECTIVES corresponding to such as begin in English with Un, In, Il, Im, Ir, or Dis, or end in less, are not very much used, Tibetans preferring to use an affirmative adjective and to put the verb in the negative. Ex.:-

Instead of saying:-

मिंके केंब के समाम केंद्र सामन केंद्र ।

He is an irreligious man,

A Tibetan would prefer to say:—

मिं में कें में भारत कर सारेता

He is not a religious man.

However, when such negative adjectives are employed, they are formed with the aid of the Colloquial negative expressions & , N, and মান্ and the Literary expressions মানুষ্, মানামে, বুমা, and অমা

Ex.:-**नर्मिश्यास**न् $\left\{ Unnecessary. \right.$ श्री:दर्गेश्य:य

Impossible.

Without fault.

भृ.प्रभायाः	মঙ্গ্রীর মৃশুর মীর $\}_{Disrespectful.}$
র্মান্	মানা্ধামা \{ Disrespectful.
शेंग्र श र्मात्रः सेंद् : Cheerless.	स'न्ना'य' Incorrect, wrong.
भैं मुं सेर् Immortal.	ਸ਼'ਸ਼ਿੱਸ਼'ਪ Having no leisure.
न्यों मुं सेर्' Immovable.	মার্থীমান্য Unheard of.
র্ন্	মান্ত্রীব্যা Immature, raw, callow.
स-५५-म-	র্টক হার্
क्ष्रिप्ट हैं सेर् Merciless.	પ્રૅન્ડ-ફ્રેન્સેટ Illiterate.
रे.य.सेर् Hopeless.	
सम्बद्धः Infinite.	स्था स्था \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \
र्यम् प्राः Immeasurable.	भैस्मिन्यः । भगावा विश्वातः
त्रु सेर्	명확'적의 Incorporeal.
মন্ত্রি Headless, Unsurmounted.	२५५ मुखः Passionless.
र्वेर सेर्	र्श्वनान्त्रयः Sinless.
ब्रिंग्सेन ब्रिंग्सेन्स्य } Without riches.	ন্নিমশ'মিব' Lawless, Illicit.

(xvii) Sometimes, in the Colloquial, the Active Participles $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{2}}$ for inanimate objects, and $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{2}}$ for animate objects, meaning which is, or are, who is, or are, are used adjectivally. Ex.:—

मुः अः नेः नारु म् अम्पन् विनाः ने । That lama is a wily one.

अवाः निन् मिं सुनाः निर्माः भिनाः ने । This country is a fertile one.

(xviii) In Literary Tibetan adjectives are frequently formed by adding to a noun, or to its root, or to a whole phrase, one of the expressions 35° Chän, 25° Dän, 25° Dän-chän, 75° Chän, 81° Chän,

Ex.:--

ই. থৰ Intelligent, Sagacious. र्दें र उव Punctilious, moderate. শ্বৰ ন্তৰ Beneficial, useful, নানাধারের Renowned, famous रेब उब Costly, expensive. वर्देर द्वाव Passionate, amorous. च्या खंब. Rocky. रमाद ख़र Blissful, joyous. ॲबर्बरबस्द. Talented, literate, accomplished. र्देब:ॲर Intelligent. बॅर इंब उब Wealthy, opulent. माजेर द्वाव उव Full of moisture. चैचाश्र.ज्ञंब.क्य. Full of energy. ষ্ট্রানা.বরপ্র Sinful. মান্মান্ত্রস্থার A perfectly accomplished scholar. मिर्दास्त्रहर्भे Having a pretty face. নি:ম'র্নামান্তর Having an ugly mouth.

ক্তৰ্ is also said to be sometimes used thus:—
ন্ত্ৰামান ই মুন্নিমান আৰু instead of ন্ত্ৰামান ই মুন্নিমান The Lama's prayer-wheel: but ন্ত্ৰামান ই মুন্নিমান would seem to be the more correct. See, however, § 31, V, (b).

Instead of constructing an adjective out of the root, the particle, and the affix 35, resort is often had to the root alone plus the affix 5' J'A, or CHA. Ex.:—

From 국제국·국장 may be formed 국제국·크 Cheerful.

From 국화·지·장 may be formed 국화·크 Mortal.

From 구화·지·장 may be formed 구화·크·중 한 Very learned.

II.—Augmenting of adjectives.

This can be done in several ways:-

(a) By simply repeating the adjective, either in the shape of the primitive root, or of the root with the particle. Ex.:—

한국 한국 Very crooked.

영국 한국 한국 Very silly.

영국 한국 한국 Very sour.

이 한국 한국 한국 Very sweet.

기술 다 의 한국 한국 Very dirty.

미성 다 의 한국 한국 Very clean.

본 한국 한국 Very early in the morning.

한국 한국 한국 Very late.

(b) By repeating the adjective, in any of its forms, with \mathbb{W}^{\bullet} Yang, inserted between them. In the Colloquial \mathbb{W}^{\bullet} becomes \mathbb{Q}^{\bullet} 'Ang, after consonants other than \mathbb{N}^{\bullet} , \mathbb{N}^{\bullet} , and \mathbb{N}^{\bullet} Ex.:—

 $\mathfrak{A} \mathfrak{T}$ also becomes $\mathfrak{A} \mathfrak{T}$ after vowels, both in the Literary language and in Colloquial. Ex.:—

 القائم المراقق المراقق

In the Literary language WT becomes JT KYANG, after final consonants T, T, and N Ex.:—

도치·미도·도치 | Very true. A 그·미도·A 그 | Very obscure 롯데·미도·용데 | Very neat. 적대·취국·미도·적대·취국 | Very narrow.

(c) By use of the affix $\widehat{\mathfrak{F}}$ Ch'E signifying emphasis generally. Ex.:—

환제 현 Extremely sinful.

제외국 현 Exceedingly brilliant.

국국 현 중 한 중 Very precious.

The above, however, is more Literary than Colloquial. In the Colloquial केंद्र , added to the root, is more common, but it is often used merely to form the adjective, and not so much to augment its force. Ex.:—

র্ম কর্ম Precious.

নির্মির্মির Brilliant.

রিম্মির্মিকর্মি Intellectual.

শ্বিমাকর্মি Sinful.

(d) By inserting 5.১৮ Very, immediately before the adjective, or by adding স্থাইন্ Very, to the adjectival root:—

र्ने न्स्र क्रिंच क्रि

Certain other adverbs may be inserted in the same way when the sentence is a negative one. Ex.:—

पर्ने कर दे दिश के स्था के ति ।

भिर्मे के प्रति के प्रत

This is quite (or absolutely improper.

He is not right at all.

That statement is not at all true.

III.—THE COMPARATIVE DEGREE.

(a) To express this Tibetans make use of the postpositions 以对 LÄ, in the Colloquial, and 以对 or 以对 PÄ (以对 wÄ, after vowels, or final C', 天', or 以') in Literature, signifying Than, or More than, but they so manipulate the sentence as to place first the object with which the subject is being compared, then the postposition, next the subject, then the adjective in its positive degree, and lastly the verb. Ex.:—

त्रदःयादेःसशायदेःसङ्गेयादे।

This house is higher than that one. Literally, Than that house this high is.

ব্ৰহ্মভূমে (pronounced Den-jong)

Tibet is colder than Sikhim.

য়ম (or প্রমা) রুই প্রেমানাম ফু প্র

य:रे**र।** य:रेर।

A religious man is happier than a worldling.

अंर्केशस्त्रवर्के वसः ब्रह्में द्वादः Philosophers are happier than ritualists.

Ascetics (meditators) are happier than professors.

(b) When there is no expressed object with which to compare the subject, an object may be supplied by means of 35 This or 5 That. Ex.:—

বেই মেশ্ব মার্ন মার্ন

(c) In the Colloquial the comparative degree of certain common adjectives has a special form. For instance, the comparative of আন্মান Good, is অন্মান Better; of আন্মান Much, it is আন্মান More; of ইন্মান Thick, it is ইন্মান Thicker; of ইন্মান Large, big, great, it is ইন্মান Larger, bigger, greater. Even with them the same construction in An is employed. Ex.:—

(d) The particle belonging to an adjective is sometimes vulgarly conjugated, *i.e.* transmuted into \mathfrak{N} , \mathfrak{N} , or \mathfrak{N} , according to the rule with reference to the last letter of the root. It is better, however, to avoid this. Ex.:—

শ্লী ব্যাব্দির দ্বি মার্লিমার

ক্রমেন্ট্রেমান্ট্রেমান্ট্র may be This wine is not good.
rendered অন্নামান্ট্রেমান্ট্র

But not where \(\tilde{

মेरेन्यस्टर्ज्याम्बर्गे, पर्या। पर्या, vot श्राप्तश्राम्भासः

This man has wiser friends than that one.

IV .- THE SUPERLATIVE DEGREE.

(a) To express this a universal comparison is resorted to, the subject being placed, at option, either before or after the expression used for the universal comparison. This latter may take numerous forms such as:—

みたどらぎ. ব্রমার্থ তেই মোরা. Than all. 却드'된'라치 翌二万.ビジンジ শ্ব'শ্বম' (Literary) क्ट्रायट्र वटावया রমধার্থ, ট্রা, ব্রারথ मार.मार्ट.यर.यश From among all. 뭐다. 너희, 역다. 역회. ग्रानी ब्राप्त (Literary) क्ट.शरी.रग्रीय.वश. রমথ তথ্ শূর্ণী প্রশূর্ম বর্ষা चार चादे र्गोधा बङ्ग From among all. 型に石が、て河のるか、 กุสาฏิารุกินาสุม (Literary)

Ex. :--

That lama is the most learned (of all).

भूटामाथकादायदी अर्मुम्बरागुः देत्।

This is the swiftest horse.

ह्युन:त्यमा:र्कट:स्रोदे:न्गुंत्यन्त्रः हें त्रिने:रेनः बट:के:म:रेनः or के:मी:रेनः (or के:स्रेश:रेनः)।

This stone is the most valuable of all well secured things.

रेब'र्से'के' or बु'त्वदे'म्ब्यब्स्स्म्दाम्बदे' र्गोव्यवसम्बद्धर्मे (or के'र्मे') रेर्।

Gold is the most precious of all metals (meltable things).

N.B.—Note that あずず in its conjugated form becomes あり

degree is to affix \sqrt{N} Sho to the root of the adjective. The order in which the sentence is constructed does not much matter, and even the use of N (in Literature N, N, or N) is optional. Ex.:—

इ.सर्ने.सर्नेचिशः वृद्धः देर्।

This horse is the fleetest.

रेव संक्रिकेटी वहानुसा (or नृणुभानुसा)

Gold is the dearest of metals.

माशेर-रेब-घट-के-व्रिंग-रेद्।

If the speaker likes he may insert $\hat{\zeta}$ The, after $\hat{\vec{\gamma}}$, thus:—

इंदर्ने सर्गेमिश्च वेंशरे रेरी

This horse is the fleetest.

र्नेष्दर्भके विष (दे) देता

This stone is the most valuable.

N.B. $\rightarrow \tilde{\gamma} \tilde{\gamma} \tilde{\beta} \tilde{\gamma}$, like many other words in MS., is often abbreviated into $\tilde{\gamma} \tilde{\gamma} \tilde{\gamma} \tilde{\gamma}$

Lhasa is the most transcendent of cities.

N.B.— সুমার ডেব্লি abbreviated into স্থান, and ম্থানার into ম্থানা

(c) Yet another expression used to indicate the superlative idea is **TOH'O', signifying The best, The most, etc. It is a Literary word, and only rarely comes into the Colloquial. It may be either prefixed or affixed to the word that it qualifies, and when prefixed should be put in the genitive case. Ex.:—

मक्रमानी नन्म।	The chief noble or lord.		
मळेंग भी भ।	The chief mother: the goddess Ďõlma.		
भक्रुचा.ची.डिंचा.स।	The principal woman in a family.		
शर्केना मी अर्केना।	The best of the best.		

In Literary Tibetan the substantive is put in the genitive case when মুক্রী is affixed. Ex.:—

चबर:ग्रेंदे:अर्क्न।	The best among the good or noble.
ব্য় ঘই মঠিশ।	The holiest $ullet$
न्गेंब सदि सर्देग।	The Chief of Rarities; the rarest Being or Object; the Supreme Being.
ব্যনাশ:ন ধু:প্র <u>ভূ</u> না।	The sublimest, most excellent.
रेदि सर्वेन।	The best or greatest of men.
মাদধা:মন্ট্ৰ:মক্ত্ৰাক্ত্ৰ।	The wisest or most learned.

In the Colloquial হার্কা, if used at all, is sometimes prefixed and sometimes affixed, but neither it nor the substantive is put in the genitive case. Ex.:—

शक्ताःश्रदः। The Chief Protector. Anything excellent of its kind; also an abbreviation of 5715 यदे सर्हेग। মর্ক্রিনা-বেদার। The highest joy, rapture, bliss. ব্রমাগ, পতুরা। The noblest, sublimest. रें सर्देग। The most excellent taste, delicious. মাদ্রধাসর্ভুনারু । The wisest, most learned. मिल्ट सर्देमा के दें। The very utmost attention. भ्रे.यं.शष्ट्रमा. or भ्रे.शष्ट्रमा The Chief of Beings, Buddha.

মুক্ত্ৰা' is also used thus in Literary Tibetan :—

মার্কনাব্দ স্থার সিনাব্দ Nobles and commonalty.

মার্কনাব্দ স্থায় The great and the vulgar.

মার্কনাব্দ বা Great and small.

বিশ্ব সমর্কনা The very excellent or superior.

Thou best of men!

V.—OTHER METHODS OF COMPARISON.

The Tibetan rendering of English phrases constructed with As..as, may be illustrated thus:—

द्यादे क्या माद स्था है ना (or मादे स्था है ना , or माद है नि है ना , or माद है ना स्था माद है ने है ना , जा माद है ना स्था माद है ने है ना , जा माद है ना स्था माद स्था माद

or:-

श्रेशकेंगांपिर।

Please give me as much (or many) of that as possible.

हिंद्र-गुैश-८-त्य-दे-दश्य-मान्ते-मान्द- । द्रामा-द्रामान्द-र्समाश्च-मान्द- शुव-य-दे-

Please give, etc.

or :--

चायट.रूचोश्व.चायट. । चायट.रूचोश.चायट. विचःता.टु.टे.चा.रूट.

Please give, etc.

हिंदिःसंनीः विद्याः मुनाः (or मुनाःसः, or वरः दुः) व्यदः नीः प्येदः स्थः or Literary व्यदः स्थः

Will you come as far as to yonder house?

त्रस्यात्रियः मीतिरस्यन्त्राम्। स्रम्यात्रियः मीतिरस्यन्त्रम्यान्यः द्विनाः

This road goes about as far as to that house.

यःनी विटार्झेट सर्जे रे स्प्रेंट यः उसादानाः स्टायदे प्याटार्सेट ।

As high as that tree-trunk is (may be) this one also is.

মে'ক্রুয়'য়৾৲য়'য়ঀ৾য়' (or ব্র'য়ঀ৾য়', or ব্র'য়৾') য়৾য়'য়'য়৾৸য়য় As far as I know, that is so: Literary, If it be according to the knowledge I possess, it is just like that.

মান্দ্র কার্মান (or মার্মান্ট্র, or মান্দ্র কার্মান্ট্র, or

As soon as he rose I fired.

दत्रे 'न्ये'क' (ने') हिन्गु 'न्ये'क'न्द्र' त्रेम्बर्भ 'हेशम्बर्मम्मे 'नेन्।

My book is as good as yours:
Literally, My book is equally
good-bad with yours.

§ 31.—THE PRONOUN.

I.—Personal Pronouns.

(a) I.

Commonest forms in Colloquial.

Expressive of humility. Chiefly used in Tsang.

Like Persian אַבּיּא Bandeh.

Emphatic forms.

This old fellow or chap. Used by the speaker in reference to himself, but only in a comic way.

The following are Book-terms:—

The following are Colloquially used by the Kyrong-pas, or Nipāl Frontier Tibetans:—

다. Pronounced almost like 씨독대 I myself.
We ourselves

(b) Thou.

[57]
Common Colloquial forms.

The genitive of $\widetilde{\beta}$ is either $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$, or $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$ Thy, Thine: and the Agentive is either $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$ or $\widetilde{\beta}$ $\widetilde{\beta}$

(pl. うちょう)

Colloquial honorifies.

Used in official correspondence.

うちょう。 (pl. うちょうい) met with in dialects.

「いっこうでする」 Polite Literary forms.

「いっこうでする」 Literary honorific

「いっこうでする」 Other Literary forms.

(c) He, or She.

| 下 | Common Colloquial forms.

The genitive of 河 is either 河京, or 河南京 His, and the agentive is either 河南, or 河南河

Polite forms, Literary and Colloquial.

[취도 중 대 Honorific form, Literary and Colloquial.

[취고대]

[기교]

[기교

Other forms for She :-

The genitive of $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$ is either $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$ or $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$, and the Agentive is either $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$ or $\widetilde{\mathcal{H}}$

(d) IT.

There is no special term for this pronoun. It is often not rendered at all. Ex.:—

If used at all it is generally rendered by ই', or ই'হে' Ex.:—

টিই'ইই'ব্যুল্'বইহ' or বই'হ'ব্যুল্' Here is your pen: its point is broken.

Usually Pronouns are not repeated in ordinary conversation after the first reference.

(e) Reflexives.

ኣር Self, One's self, is the commonest expression, both in the Colloquial and in Book-language. Other Book-terms with the same meaning are:— ସ୍ୱ୍ୟୁ, ୬୯, ኣር-୬୯, and ସ୍ୟୁ-୬୯,

II.—DECLENSION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

This follows the same rules as apply in the case of Substantives. Ex.:—

Singular.

Nom. Voc.

Acc.

ርጀ Of me. Gen.

Agent. SN' By me.

Dat. TO me.

Loc. です。On me.

Per.

Mod. Against me.

Abl. こ. ロシ. Than me.

\ দেই স্থ্যাধ্য Towards me.
\ দেৱমা From me. From me.

Nom. Voc. Acc.

て.ゼに切. Gen.

८.४८.म्|झ. By me.

に、 ガバ・ 兄・ Dat. To me. Plural.

We.

Of us.

চার্স্কর্ম By us.

To us.

TES On us

に若ちて Against us.

こぎぬい Than us.

ের্ন্থনিষ্টামানা Towards us.

TEST From us.

ロスロボ We.

にてござれ Of us.

にてござい By us.

ביגבי אָנְיֹמִי To us.

And so forth.

Voc.

Thou.

Acc. Gen.

Of thee, Thy.

Agent.

F5'TN By thee.

You.

Of you, yours.

নিহ'র্ন্ডা By you.

And so forth.

Or:-Gen.

📆 TR Of thee, Thy. 📗 📆 TR Of you, yours.

F5'5'N' By thee. Agent

দিন ইমা By you.

ኧፔ Thou, is declined like ፔንጂ I.

 ΓI .

Nom. Voc.
$$Acc.$$
 \overrightarrow{F} \overrightarrow{F} $He.$ \overrightarrow{F} \overrightarrow{F}

And so forth.

 $\widetilde{\Pi} \widetilde{\Gamma}$ He, is declined like $\Gamma \widetilde{\Gamma}$ I.

ইি She, is declined like ই He.

지하 This humble one, has for genitive 회, and for Agentive 회사 지하는 This humble one, has for genitive 회, and for Agentive 회사 All those ending in 되, 되, 자, 자, and 도 are declined like

Those ending in 5° are declined like 5° Thou, save as regards the forms in 5°

N.B.—Plural Nouns do not take the plural sign Ξ if from the context it is clear that plurality is intended [See § 29 B, 2 (e)], but plural Pronouns always take the sign, except when they are qualified by Numeral Adjectives.

EXAMPLE :--

III. THE REFLEXIVE PRONOUN.

he following are examples of $\Figspace T$ Self, One's self, used reflexively:—

च्यांत्रस्त्रं वा त्यांत्रस्य स्वांत्रस्य स्वांत्य स्वांत्रस्य स्वांत्रस्य

ৼয়৾৻ঽয়ৼঢ়ঢ়৻ড়য়৻ঢ়৾৻য়য়য়৻ড়ঀঢ়য়ৼ ৼয়ৣ৾ৼ৻ঀ৻ৼৼঢ়ৣঢ়৻ড়য়৻ঢ়ৢ৻ড়ৢঀঀ

गुे.श्र.४८.ट्.पेश.वेग।

भ्राम्य स्थान

हिंद्र-देश-दृद्धः रद्दाः यत्वन्यः याः विकार्यः । or ध्येद्र-दक्षः ।

र्नेब-दे-रदावशःग्रुदः।

हिश.देश.पूर्च. इट.ची. हुँचेश.ज.पंडेर.

श्रेस्रशःकृतः (or ठ्राशःयः) म्बिनाःसः स्टः इशःसरः दः विशःगुनः त्रा

য়ःचाल्द्रसःद्वीं स्टाः द्वीतःचाल्द्रसः सःद्वीते द्वारासः द्वीतः चीत्रम्

によっているのかるがというに!

If I know myself spiritually I shall see God.

If I see God spiritually I shall know myself.

Man, know thyself.

The murderer has killed himself.

Did you keep the money for yourself?

The idea originated from myself.

The dog pulled the bone towards itself.

The soul alone really knows itself.

Other men are ourselves incarnate under other conditions.

He that speaketh of (from) himself, seeketh his own glory (John vii. 18).

I am not come of myself (John vii. 28).

Or better:-

हार्षे रहायों केरातुं (or र्नेषातुं) स्प्रिंट नासेष्

I am not, etc.

दशकीरटायबिक्वकारुण्यटामुद्दाकी**पुत्र।**

I can of mine own self do nothing (John v. 30).

Or better:-

भ्र.**बे**श.जू । इश.स.स.ची.भर्बेश.बु.कु.लट.चुट.तर.

I can, etc.

दशःगुदःरदःमीः विस्रशःसःमीर्डेर् दें।

I judge not mine own self (1 Cor. iv. 3).

Or better:-

दशः हार हा स्वास्थ्य स्वास्य स्वास्थ्य स्वास्थ्य स्वास्थ्य स्वास्थ्य स्वास्य स्वास्य

I judge not, etc.

मिर्दरमार्देवपुः हे बेर।

Or better:—

हिर्दर्भ भेरित्र वायममु के विद्

८<u>२.छिर.र</u>म्बेश.५३.५स।

Or better:-

૽ૄ૽ૼઽૼ૽૽ૢ૿૱ૡઽ૽ૺ૽ૢૢૢ૽ૼૢૼઽઽઌ૽૿ૺ૽ૣ૽ૢૼૼૹ૽૽ૣૼૼઽૺૡ૱ ૽૽ૼઌ૽ૹ૾ૡ૽૽૾૾ૺ

चेत्रयर त्युर र । चेत्रयर प्याप्त स्टास्य स्ट What sayest thou of thyself (John i. 22).

What sayest, etc.

Askest thou this of thyself? (John xviii. 34).

Askest thou this, etc.

Whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be accepted (Matt. xxiii. 12).

IV.—Compounds in 55 Rang.

(a) $\mathbf{K}\mathbf{\Sigma}$ frequently forms the first part of a compound. Ex.:—

下多了1

Self; One's self.

২८:श्रेशश।

One's own soul.

you.

جد: کا

Each; each respectively; Hon. for

スにえば、新祖川

Each has hold of his own leadingstring (D).

メア・ナダ・カゴア・1

Each at his own door.

रटारेवे क्षे दुटना

Spontaneous; of itself.

रट.चैचाश्राप्त।

Spontaneously.

रट.चैचश्र.ग्रेश।

Self-sprung.

۲۲.ẫ۲.۱

-

श्चायदे प्रदासम्बद्धाः स्राप्तमायदे प्रदासम्बद्धाः

Love seeketh not its own (N.T.).

Bringeth not about its own ends.

By ignorance one's future was of

its own self destroyed.

नुस्रायान्दार्नेत्रिक्षानुर।

Love, etc.

Or better:-

Doce, etc.

वुस्रसायारपार्देशवीरणीःसेतरुम।

I shall go to the house of my own accord.

ट.रट.पंचैट.मिट.ज.पंजू.ची.लूब।

Let us (the two of us) go hence together.

रटमिकेशक्षेत्रायात्रीत्रायम्

One's own perception, intelligence, and happiness, three things (D).

रट.रुच।रट.चाश्रल.रट.चरे.चाश्रुश।

You will take your own life (D).

মনে:র্মুনা:মনে:নীর্ম:নার্ট্র-ানী:মির।

(b) $\mathbf{55}$ also often forms the second part of a compound. Ex.:—

٢٠٠١	An unmarried man.
<u>स</u> -र-।	A spinster; a woman by herself.
3:45.1	The very same, exactly, quite so.
न्तान्द्राध्येवः नेत्र्द्राध्येवः	It is just so; it is precisely so.
<u>Ā.ჟ.</u> ∠c. l	Quite early in the morning.
ले न :बॉर्स्स ले:बॉर्स्स अट:बॉर्स्स	With negative—Not much, Not many.
८:५८:अ५:य'४८:बीश ।	By the mere (just by) meeting with me.
श्च-रा	A man all by himself; just a man.

V.—Possessive Pronouns.

1.—Ordinary Personal Pronouns.

(a) Possessive Pronouns are formed by putting the Personal Pronouns in the Genitive case. They may either precede or follow the noun or object in respect of which possession is predicated. Ex.:—

नेप्तित्तुम्भरने	That is my thunder.
Or:-	
ঀ <u>য়</u> ৢয়ৢৼ৸ৼৼ৾ৼঀ৾ৼ৾ঀ	That thunder is mine.
५२ हिंद से के किया कि कि	This is your dictionary.
Or :— র্ক্রশান্মর্ছির বেই ট্রিল্ ইন্ট্রিন ইন্	This dictionary is yours.

(b) In some works it is stated that the Possessive case may also be formed by affixing $\Im \Im$ to the shorter forms of the Personal Pronouns. Thus, $\Gamma \Im \Im$ My, mine, of me; $\Gamma \Im \Im$ His, of him, and so forth. If

this be so, it must be a very obscure Literary usage. If an Ü-pa heard or saw the expression 5.35, it would probably raise in his mind the idea of egoism, selfishness, etc., and not that of the Possessive case as associated with the first person. Compare the phrase 5.574.35, I the chief, i.e., possessed of pride, i.e., proud.

So, also, the expression ব্লামান নিম্মান নিম্মান করে, said to be the the equivalent of ব্লামান নিম্মান নিম্মান নিম্মান করে। The Lama's prayer-wheel, probably means The Lama with, or possessed of, the prayer-wheel.

2.—Reflexive Possessive Pronouns.

These are merely the Reflexive Pronouns put in the Genitive case. They then signify One's, One's own, My own, Thy own, Thine own, His own, Her own, Its own, Our own, Your own, Their own, according to the pronoun, either expressed or implied, to which, in the same sentence, they respectively refer back.

Colloquial Examples:—

CATTCT T'AT (A) THE MAP THE STATE OF TH

র্ট্রিব্-ইশ্ব-হা-ক্রী-ক্রিক্রিব্-র্ট্রব্-র্ট্রব্-র্ট্রব্-র্ম। শ্বিক্-বান্ধা or Literary শ্বিক্-ব্রম।

፲፱፻፡፰፻፡፴མ་རང་ཚོན་གྲ་ཚོ་དང་ལ་ནོན་ ཚོ་དང་གུར་མ་ཚོ་ལ།ཁྱེར་དགོས་གྱི་རེད। or:—

बुरःसः त्षुरः निम्नी निः निः निष्टिं सः नः

मिर्स्य प्रदानी पर्से दि स्मेट के मिर्स्य प्रदानी प्रस्ति । स्मेट ।

I shall ride my own horse.

We shall have to cook our own food.

Will you bring your own servant?

You must all bring your own knives, forks and spoons.

Each of you must bring his own knife, fork and spoon.

He did not realize his own good luck.

They cannot tell their own names.

য়৾ৼ৾ৼয়৽ (or য়ৼয়৾য়য়৽) ৼৼঢ়৾ৗড় য়৾ৼঀঢ়৾য়ৼয়৾৽ঀৼয়ড়য়ড় ড়ঀৢয়ৢঀ

Every man believes his own watch is the most accurate.

মি রমধাত্তব মে ক্রি নি মুদ্দি দাধানাৰ্থ ইবি থানে।

They have all cleared out of their own village.

विट सं रे रे अर्द मी ब्रीट द्वाद खें ।

Every house has its own park (compound).

चर्ष्यकःचिंदः। दःस्टःम्बाखःभश्रदः (जा) क्रु.म्बे.

My own mother educated me.

In honorific form :-

ॻॖॹॱॻॹॖय़ॱय़ॱॿढ़ॎॱॲ॔ड़। ८ॱॸ८ॱॿॊॱॶॖॺॱक़ॣॖॖॱॿऻढ़ॖॕॿऻॹॱग़ॖॆॺॱ८ॱय़ॗॿऻ

My own mother, etc.

मिन्द्रमी प्रश्रेत् यद्देवे यद्वे स्मामक् दे स्मेक य देत्।

He was the architect of his own good fortune.

मानुशः से : रेस: र ट. मी : सुमा स : धमा : वेस: धना समाने : रेस: र ट. मी : सुमा स : धमा : वेस:

Every housewife thinks her own broom is the best.

वित्राम् । जुरा।

He succeeded because of his own diligence.

The following are Literary:—

भ्रु'खश्राताः वैदः में विदः वित्तः हो । विदः दरः मेशादेदः द्वे देः श्रेमा याद्वे दरः मे।

He himself bearing our sins in his own body upon the tree (1 Peter ii. 24).

शुः भरः मिं ररः में ब्लिं तर्रेर् क्या ब्लेर् या रियार मिं ररः में ब्लिं तर्रेर् क्या ब्लेर् या

He who speaks of himself seeks his own glory (John vii. 18).

मिट दे रटमी मियामिसर रे में में राजित । प्रिट-रट मी त्यदश हैश गुश्रास

He came to his own kingdom, but his own subjects received him not (John i. 11).

नुस्रसाय रदार्ने ने ने ने ने ने ने न रदः र्रोमारदामीशमार्रेद् गीः रेद्।

Love seeketh not her own (1 Cor. xiii, 5),

रदायामुखेराव।

You will take your own life (D).

It one have no son of his own (D).

VI.—DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

These may also be called Distinguishing Adjectives. The commonest are R5 This, and 5 That, as to which see § 27.

The following are also common:-

This very, This same.

That very, That same.

ス축'께'**ጚ**Ľ'

This particular.

That particular.

That very; that precisely; just so; like that, thus; so; just that.

Also the following:-

That over there, Yonder (far off).

That just there (nearer).

That up there.

That down there,

These latter may be used just as they stand, or they may be put in the genitive case. Whichever method is adopted, they precede the noun that they distinguish, and they may be used with or without 5

Also the following:-

RSTS Such, such as.

Examples:—

বইস্থ্য শ্বৰ।

ই:শ্রু:শ্রু

नरे. प्ते ख़ुन (णुना) भेना

रे प्रे क्षेत्र यन्मा भेता

भुॱदमा⁻देःरदःमीशाहिँद्रभूँदामाबदःमीःरेद।

पायट रेमायामायट । पायट रेमायामायट ।

त्रभागात्र्रीयाची। भ्रमणात्र्रीयाची।

षर्वःषमःगाःमाः ५५ सः स्प्रिः धमः ।

त्रनाश्चरःमात्ररःत्रःगुँनाःगुँनाःनामाः स्रा

दमामा सप्ता (or सप्ता) क्षेप्पेट ।

マーコ・スエ・必ず 1

य'मी'रेदे'स्रीट'ल'मा'रे'बेर'मी'र्लेर्।

Or :--

य'मी' (or य'मीते') रे'नेते'स्रीट'त्रमा' रे'बेर'मी'र्थेर। Who is this?

Who is that?

This is my brother, or sister.

That is my master.

That same gentleman will employ you.

Please give me what you can of that: literally, what you can from that, just that please give.

This road goes as far as to that house: literally, this road to that house, about just that, goes.

What is the road like to the pass?

Very steep and crooked, just like that.

That won't do at all: literally, like that will not come at all.

That is so.

What is the name of that hill away yonder?

What is the name, etc.

अमी दिर हेत से दे से हो भी मी से हो है स्

The name of that big valley down there is Do-mo (Chūmbi).

ট্রি-ইম্মান্ত্রি-মেন্ত্রিমার্ন্ত্রিমার্ন্ত্রিমার্ন্ত্রিমার্ন্ত্রিমার্ন্তর | Have you ever heard such a name before?

The Literary equivalents for most of the above are:-

	THE LITTER	ary equivalents i	or most or t	ne above are	•
	٩ 5-	This.	५ ५,३सश.	These.	
	5	That.	रे.क्सरा.	Those.	
	परेंचें परेंगेंर परेंग्दः परेंदिंच परेंदिंच	This very; This same.	নিজ নিজীন নিজন নিজিক নিজিক	That very; That same.	
)	त्रीयाः त्रीयाः त्री याः	This particular,	रे [.] मा रे ^{.मा} रे.मा-रूट	That partice	
	कुं कि कुं के अ.कुं अ.कुं अ.कुं	This here.	यः वैः यः वैः दे देः दे	i	Save 자꾸 and 각꾸 these are not used in Ü, or Tsang.
	देशदायः देशदायः देशदायः	Such, Such as.			
	ව්.ත. මුන.ව්.ත.	So named, Nam	red.		

EXAMPLES :-

८.४८.५ (or अष्ट्र.) पर्नु.खेश.ये.व

गे. इ. ये. त. श्र. श्रूब. वे. य. वेचा. वेट. यं श्र. श्रूट श. त. त. त. त. वे. यं वेचा. वेट. यं श. श्रूट श.

स.सं.ल.त.लू. श्व.वी.व । यवट.सू.ल.थे.टॅ.तपु.मूंट.प्रिस.ल.सू. लट.कुंश.चुना जूंश.श्र.कुंश.टंट.खेट.

८.५२.जर.लूर

I and one so named; I and so and so.

They laid hold upon one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country (Luke xxiii. 26).

And behold, a man named Joseph, who was a councillor, a good man and a righteous, of Arimathæa, a city of the Jews (Luke xxiii. 50).

Such as this am I (D).

VII.—THE RECIPROCAL PRONOUN.

माउँमा नाउँमा। One another; each other.

EXAMPLES:-

मि क्रून्याकृषा मीश्चामाकृषा पुरस्या में पुरस्य । स्रोत्या

They loved each other.

द्वादः र्द्धरः सुः महिन्। सः र्द्धः महिनाः सः सहिन। द्वादः र्द्धरः सुः महिनाः सः सहिन।

The ladies looked at one another mirthfully.

व्यः क्रें नाडेमानी सः त्यानाडेमा धुन या ने रा

They have gone up to each other.

मिं के नाडेना नीश माडेना नी नुमा सेना होन नुर्देश सुश्रास के न

They have scrutinized each other's garments.

ञ्च सः क्रें नाडेना दशमाडेना नीश । या या प्राप्त । ञ्चा स्थान

The Lamas received ceremonial scarfs from one another.

मिं कें मिडमा दूर अ% अर् नु मिडमा स्री अर्था रेद।

They have gone in company with one another.

मि के महिमाय महिमारिश्वराय विराणी तर्मा

They are conversing with each other.

वित्रकें प्यटमिक्षणी से निक्षणी मिन्न द्या वित्रप्रमिक्षणी से ।

Ye also ought to wash one another's feet (John xiii. 14).

चाडुचा.ज.चाडुचा.जच.झूट.। चाडुचा.ज.चाडुचा.जच.झूट.।

Some of his disciples said one to another.

VIII.—INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

In the Colloquial these are:—

ন্ই is more commonly used than ন্ত

All the above are declinable like nouns.

The Literary equivalents are:—

In simple questions the Interrogative Pronoun is usually placed immediately before the verb. Ex.:—

ট্র-মুন্দ্র Who are you? (singular).
ট্র-মুন্দ্রম্ম্ব।
Who are you? (plural).

<u> ५२.५.४.७५।</u> রমেরেই ঐত্যুস্ত্র ইব। रेउन्सम्सुस्य हिंदणी'सिद्धायामा'रे बेरमी'रेद। स्मारेमारेशानवेशायारेत। मित्रपदिर्देशीयारे मारे रेर। देखक्षारेषारेषा 521'&'25'8\\\175C'C'\$5| <u>বর্ম করেই র্কু বি বুলী মার্ক্সার্মির শূর্মালা</u> मैप्टर्र गुैप्दर्म।

Who is present?

Who are these Lamas?

What Lamas were there?

What is your name?

What is that box made of (by)?

What are these loads?

What horses were there?

Who sent this book?

Which of these books do you want?

If, however, the Interrogative is in the genitive case, it may come either before the verb or before its noun. Ex.:-

यः मी प्रदाय सुदे : रेप or या मी सुदे

Whose house is that?

When, too, the sentence is more complex, the pronoun, though it precedes, need not immediately precede the verb.

ઉત્રિક્તિ તેમ્યું અસ્ત્રાસ્થિત સ્ટેન્સ્ ষ্ব'শু'ম্ব্ৰা

Which of you can give me a rupee?

With what is the Kingdom of God to be compared? (Mark iv. 30).

<u> ५७७५:अर्केना नी क्राथ श्री५ के ५२थे माट ५८:</u> ダイ・コイ・コマター

> Who among you can charge me with any sin?

हिन कें दे नित्वसास्या दाया के मा या मारे मा दम्रोताः नरः वृद्धः गुः तर्म।

When the sentence contains an Interrogative Pronoun the Interrogative particle is not usually added to the verb. However, there is no harm in adding it. Ex.:---

हिंदि गुरिस मारे यहें रागी के दिन नमा

What are you building?

मिट या ने सुकाय डेंका खेट or खेट द.

Who is going to build that house?

or ME.EN. or ME.EN!

य ने अम्बर्धे दे अर्द्धदाया में हुने स्पेर्। What is that abbot's name?

૽ૼૹૻ૽ૢ૽ૹ૽ૼૼૼૼઽઌૻ૽૽ૼૺ૱

What o'clock is it? What is the time, or hour? Literally What water-measure is it.

Also TASN, or TAS. LIKE WHAT, WHAT SORT, WHAT KIND? This is really the adverb how, but it is often used as an Interrogative Pronoun in the sense now given. Ex.:—

अमीर्देटक्षिन्दे देख्टक्षरे द्वारामः प्रमान

What sort of sport (wild animals, game) is there in that big valley down there?

न्। हु.) चर.जभ.पो.चट्रे.जूस.पो.पट्स. क्रे.स.यंश.चर्या.पुंचा हैंये.जू. (or चांबु.

What is the road like from Lhasa to Ta-shī-lhüm-po (Shi-ga-tse)?

The Literary equivalent of স্বের্ষ' is ই'র্ম', or উ'র্ম' or ই'র্ম' or ই'র্ম' or Ex.:—

र.कु.केर.चेश.य.जुनाश।

What is best to be done now? How best to act now?

शरशःमीशःजुशःनुःयःकुःभैःयःभूष।

What sort of Being is the so-called Buddha?

N.B. is more correct, but $\hat{\Xi}$ is also used interrogatively.

IX .-- RELATIVE AND CORRELATIVE PRONOUNS.

A.—Relative Pronouns.

In the Colloquial there is no pronoun corresponding to our Relative Pronoun Who, the force and effect of which are expressed by tarning what we call the relative clause in the sentence into a kind of adjectival or noun phrase. This is done by adding to the root of the verb the affix ठान्द्र, which, it will be remembered, may take the Article, Definite or Indefinite. Ex.:—

त्रनार्क्ष नार्शेन् स्राप्तक ने प्रकार सर्वेद वुद । अनार्क्ष नार्शेन् स्राप्तक ने प्रकार सर्वेद वुद ।

I have seen the man who kills the sheep.

लनार्ज्यं मार्थेन आयम्मी शेप्ते विकासर्वेट

He has seen the man who kills the sheep.

গ্ন-বশ্ব-প্রচিশ-র্র্য-রূপ-রূত-।

५५मा

He who killed the man (i.e., the man-killer, or murderer) has run away.

वैदः। श्रीटःगीःचन्नरं,स्नायनं,सुःरं,टन्नःसुत्र्र्टः। श्रीटःगीःचन्नरं,स्नायनं,सुःरं,टन्नःसुत्र्र्टः। श्रीटःगीःचन्नरं,स्नायनं,रुःदन्नःसुत्र्टः,वैदः।

I have seen the man who killed the wolf, i.e., the wolf-killer, or wolfkilling man.

શ્चिट गौ. चश्चर श्रीचर श्री चुंचे के प्रसाहर चुंच गौ. कूरी I know the brother of the man who killed the wolf.

समाश्रामास्यास्य भ्रानुशाङ्घराणुदेः भुराणुः मश्रामास्य भ्रानुशाङ्घराणुदेः

The man who killed the wolf has given me its skin.

ञ्चिदार्गु :नश्रद्धाः सम्बर्ग्नु :श्रें 'द्राट्स अस्तु : द्रा भुदार्श्वेदः । I went mith the man who killed the wolf.

स.ज.चम्येयास.सूट.। जूट.त.वसस.क्ट.श्रीट.गी.नश्च.शांचर.सुटू. All the villagers ran to the man who killed the wolf.

्य) द्रे**।** ड्रॅड्र.क्र.मञ्ज्याः हुंद्र.ड्रॉट. or हुंद्र.द्र. ड्रॅड्र.मॅं.च्यंत्रचीः हुंद्र.क्रंट. or हुंद्र.दर

विनामिट सः सः नीः तः र्श्वेरः ग्रीः तर्ना। विनामिट सः सः नीः तः र्श्वेरः ग्रीः तर्ना।

शे. दे. बेचश सदे. दे. से से से से हैं। ची. देरें बेरे से दे. से से से से हैं।

त्रकेर-स्ना-ह्नाश-क्तुव-स्नाम्य-क्तु-स्रोद-स्रोद-अवा-हेन्।

জনম'ন্ব'ব্দেষগুম'বু'ঐদ'মান্ব'নী' এমিন'নাঐনা'নীম'শাম'শাব্দু'এ'ড' এনা'নিব'মের্ড'ন'নিব'নী

चर्रालाःस्रेर्-कःचेश्वासाःस्रेर्वन्स। हिर्दे-मुश्यःमीयेनायेशःस्राटाःस्रोत्यःमीःस्रक्षः

स्यानी, मधिश हुँच निम्मी, स्वराट जा.

The abbot gave the man who killed the wolf a rupee.

A man who came with the Sha-pé is staying in that house.

That man is the servant of an official who came with the Sha-pé.

What is the name of the man who signed the Treaty?

The attendants who came with the Sha-pé bought many quaint things in Calcutta.

Did you converse with the Amban who came from China?

I have got two two-edged bans (swords) from a man who used to live in Lhasa.

The above are all in the Active Voice, but a difficulty occurs when there is nothing in the context to show whether the Active or the Passive Voice is meant. In the following examples, for instance, either voice may be implied:—

स्थानश्चर्याम्यान्त्रः भ्रान्ते स्थानश्चरः भ्राम्यः भ्रान्ते स्थान्तः भ्रान्ते स्थान्तः स्थानः स्थान्तः स्थानः स्थान्तः स्थान्तः स्थान्तः स्थान्तः स्थान्तः स्थान्तः स्थानः स्थान्तः स्

I have seen the man who killed, i.e., the murderer, or killingman; or

I have seen the man who was killed.

In such cases the general drift of the conversation is the sole guide to what the meaning really is. In fact, the last three examples are susceptible of a third rendering, namely, The man who was killed by me has been seen; and, if this is not the meaning intended by the speaker, the Personal Pronoun St should be inserted immediately before the verb. Thus:-

I have seen the man who killed;
or
I have seen the man who was killed.

The difficulty as regards Voice is, however, removable by avoiding the construction in आवित for the Passive Voice, and using instead the simple Participle as an adjective either preceding or following its noun. $\mathbf{E}\mathbf{x}$.:—

 $\left\{ egin{array}{lll} I & have & seen & the & man & who & was \\ & & killed \, . \end{array}
ight.$

Or the construction in AA5 may be retained and something introduced to indicate by whom or by what the man was killed. Ex.:-

He has seen the man who was killed by the soldier.

ব্রালা-গ্রীঝা-রী-বর্মব্র-মোন্র-র-রি-মো-মর্গ্রি-32.1 रस्रमा सेश यशर स्राप्तर में। से रे प्रस श्रुट्र-वैट्.।

I have seen the man who was killed by the soldiers.

The best way of differentiating between the voices in cases of this sort is to make use of the different roots of the auxiliary verb 35.4 To do. Thus:-

মের্মান্তম্ন (or নাইনি) বুমান্ত I have seen the man who was killed.

মোন্ধানমান (or নার্মিন্ন) ব্রানামার্মিন I have seen the man who is to be killed.

The Relative Pronouns That and Which may refer either to Animates or to Inanimates. When Animates are concerned, the construction for the Active Voice should be in 5175, as above exemplified. Ex.:—

नश्चरःशम्बरःनेःदशःशर्वेदः वुदः। वश्चरःशम्बरःनेःदशःशर्वेदः वुदः।

I have seen the dog that killed.

त्त्रिः नश्चन्यः स्त्रिः स्त्रेत्तः स्त्रेतः स्तर्भेतः । स्त्रम् स्त्राप्तस्य स्त्रीः स्त्रेतः स्तर्भेतः स्तर्भेतः ।

The head of the dog that killed has been chopped off.

The dog that killed the man has not been caught.

When Animates are concerned, the construction for the Passive Voice is also in APA, when the Agent is indicated; and in a simple Participle used as an adjective, either preceding or following its noun, when the Agent is not indicated. Ex.:—

ব্রিম:। ট্রিম:বম্ম-মাদ্র-দ্রী:बे:म्रे:ने:प्रस्मम्र्वेट: ট্রিম:বম্ম-মাদ্র-দ্রী:बे:म्रे:ने:प्रस्मम्बेट: ব্রুप:। ট্রিম:बे:मेर्स-स्वेट:

I have seen the cat that was killed by the dog.

I have seen the cat that was killed.

This construction may also be used when the agent is indicated. Ex.:—

ਭਿੰਘਾਰਘਨ੍ਧਨੇ 'ਕੇ'ਐ'ਨੇ'ਨਘ਼'ਅੱਬੇੱਟ'ਰੂਟ'। $\begin{cases} I \text{ have seen the cat that was killed} \\ by \text{ the dog.} \end{cases}$

When Inanimates are concerned the Participial construction should be adopted. This construction, like the one in राष्ट्रिक, is also in itself incapable of differentiating between the Active and the Passive Voice. Thus:—

ञ्जनाश्चर्यायादीत्वरीतेत्। or पदीञ्जनाश्चर्यायादीतेत्। This is the iron that broke (something); or, This is the iron that was broken.

The following, however, illustrate the Active Voice, as an object is mentioned, and the sense is therefore clear. Ex.:—

र्हे नडमा सदै ख़ुमाश है (दर्दे है)

This is the iron that broke the stone, i.e., the stone-breaking iron.

विमाश्यत्वम्यते हे हे ति है हो हो ।

Or:—
अमाश्र हे विस्ताय है ति है हो है ।

व्यास है विस्ताय है सि है है है है है ।

व्यास है विस्ताय है सि है है है ।

व्यास है विस्ताय है सि है है ।

Or:—
व्यास है है है है है है है है है ।

This is the stone that broke the iron.

Here is the arrow that struck the rock.

The following illustrate the Passive Voice:-

ञ्चनासः गुँसः देन न्यान्यः देन देन देन वा स्वत्रः गुँसः व्यवना स्वतः देन देन वा स्वतः स्व

This is the iron that was broken, by the stone.

This is the stone that was broken by the iron.

सर्सप्यंनायते वनारे तेरे उत्तुन। विराधित स्थानस्य स्थान स्य

Here is the rock that was struck by the arrow.

I will give you the book that you read to me.

The Active Participles \widetilde{W}_{1}^{*} for Animates, and \widetilde{W}_{1}^{*} , for Inanimates, may also be used for the construction of Relative clauses, the former being put in the Genitive case, and the latter also, if it precedes its noun, but in the Nominative case if it follows its noun.

EXAMPLES:-

न्तः द्वाः स्वाय्येन् स्वायन्तः मी की हिमा स्वायः नी सेन्।

५दूस-द्वास स्प्रेन्स्ति : स्वास्त्रान्ते : विद्युत्स द्वास स्प्रेन्स्ति : स्वास्त्रान्ते :

तक्षान्त्रम्। चनाःस्नाःक्षेतःस्नासःसःस्र्रःसःनेःदर्धसः नमाःस्नाःक्षःगुःतर्नुन। A man who is now in Lhasa will come.

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

In this last case the Pronoun निरं (or निरं), which, may be used thus:—

ह्म स्थानानान्ते (or माटा) विटानमान स्थानानान्ते (or माटा) विटानमान्ते सार्थे प्राप्ते प्रस्ति स्थानाने सार्थे प्रस्ति स्थानान्ते (or माटा) विटानमान्ते

चर्चेयःतः रे.हिर्-रुशःश्रवृट्-वैटःटश । ४श्रुटःलुचीः (ची.रु.) झे.श्रःज्ञःस्चीशः The cave that is in the forest must be searched.

Have you seen the Treaty that was signed at Lhasa?

B.—Correlative Pronouns.

The English Personal Correlative Pronouns, the rendering of which into Tibetan has now to be considered, are —

I or WE THOU or YOU HE or THEY WHOSO. WHOEVER.	Wно.	ANYBODY ANYONE NOBODY NO ONE	Жио.
WHOSOEVER.			

The Impersonal Correlative Pronouns may refer either to Animates or to Inanimates, and are:—

WHAT, OF THAT WHICH.

WHATSOEVER.

WHICHSOEVER.

WHICHSOEVER.

ANYTHING THAT.

WHICHEVER.

1.—Personal Pronouns.

When the Pronoun is in the first or second person, singular or plural, one construction is to use the Pronoun itself, in its ordinary non-relative form (5, 5, 7, 5, etc.), and to turn what we call the Relative part of the sentence into a sort of Noun-phrase, with the aid of the affix 5, Ex.:—

দার্ভিন্ নে: রুবানের বিশক্তির নির্দিত্ব ক্রিক্ নির্দিত্ত বিশ্বনার (or মি:ম্বিন্দ্র ক্রিক্ নির্দিত্ত বিশ্বনার (or মি:ম্বিন্দ্র ক্রিক্ নির্দ্ধর । ক্রিক্ নির্দ্ধর । ক্রিক্ নির্দ্ধর । I who am conversing with you (i.e.,
I the converser with you) am
your king.

We who salute you (i.e., we your saluters) are your subjects.

िदःसुःकुषःस्रामदःदेःषःटःर्द्धसःसर्गः द्युरःकुषःस्रामदःदेःषःटःर्द्धसःसर्गः

We submit to thee who hast subdued us, i.e., to thee our subduer.

Sometimes, however, the sentence has to be wholly recast and a participial construction adopted instead. Ex.:—

हिन्नु अस्य द र्जे न्या स्वाप्त के सानु निष्ठ हिन्नु स्वाप्त के सानु निष्ठ हिन्नु स्वाप्त स्त

Thou whose son is with us (i.e., thy son being with us, thou) must be our king.

लूट.। बन्न.) लट.श्रुट.क्टट.क्टट.५**८**. or श्र.चून. (or चून.) क्रेब.ब. (or क्रेब.

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) runs away is (or will be) a coward.

सुर्खेट द (or खेट दश) धट दशः । धट खेना मी सन्देत्।

Nobody (or no-one) who comes will ever return: or, he who (or whoever, or anyone who) comes will never return.

श्रुते :श्रेमाय मिंत्र ग्रीश मश्राप्त पार ने नेत्। र्से ते :श्रेमाय मिंत्र ग्रीश मश्राप्त (for नः) नेत्।

Whose-soever sins ye remit they are remitted.

श्चिंश द्वेश वशायट वर्मे वाल्टा।

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) runs away will be shot.

रे.ये.शं.चाकेरामियायात्रात्रात्रायम्बेरः सर्भाःश्रात्राः (or वसायमाकेरः सर्भोःश्राप्ताः Anybody who (or he who, or whoever) goes to sleep there will never wake up.

Whoever (or anyone who, or he who) drinks this water will be thirsty again.

शुः ॲट दः अट : यशामा नुदे दन्ने शामी : दे द

He who (or whoever, or anyone who) comes must work.

ধ্বুধ'মধ্য'শ'ব্বিধ'র'অম'ব্র' (ম') র্র্যাধ্য'

Whoever (or he who, or whosoever or anyone who) works will be paid.

शुः त्राची सुः त्राची

Whosoever hath, to him having been given, he shall have abundance; but whosoever hath not, णुट स्पेर्न स्वा ने त्र्यम् स्वा or

from him even that which he hath shall be taken away.

्रित्रेचाश्चात्रः) च्रुंशःक्षेत्रः श्रूटः । भ्राज्येत् त्रात्रेत्रः स्टान्त्वेत्रः मुक्षः (०० स्टाः भ्रुव्याश्चात्रः भ्रुव्याश्चात्रः स्टाः

Anyone towards whom the bull rushes will naturally run away.

(or क्वीमान्द्रामार्ट्रिटाबा) **अट**प्ट्राशेश्वशः श्चिमान्द्रामार्ट्रिटाबा) अटप्ट्राशेश्वशः श्चिमान्द्रामार्ट्रिटाबा)

Anyone with whom that Lama over there quarrels will regret it.

Sometimes both ১, WT and ১, Tag. are used together. Ex.:—

शुःभी मी पर्ने प्रिन् साम्बर्ने पा धार प्रशः I will give a rupee to anyone who will carry this letter.

N.B.—It will be noticed that \mathfrak{Y} is usually separated from $\mathfrak{W} \Gamma$. Moreover, it is the \mathfrak{Y} and not the $\mathfrak{W} \Gamma$ which takes whatever casesigns are necessary, and the $\mathfrak{W} \Gamma$ comes in at the end of the relative clause.

2.—Impersonal Pronouns.

In the case of What (in the sense of That which) which is really a Correlative Pronoun, the participial construction is adopted, and the Pronoun $\P^{\star\star}$ (or $\P^{\star\star}$) That which may be used or not at pleasure. Ex.:—

वित्र देश मार्चे (or मार) त्रिमाय देवे देवे (तमा) द्रामी मेरे द्राप्त । Or simply:— वित्र देश त्रीमा यादेवे देवे द्राप्त दिना द

८२मामारा

Do you understand what you are reading?

다시 현국 'A' (미국' or 되다') 지역 'A' You must do what I tell you. रे'छिर'रेश'छेर'रमेंश'णे'रेर।

हिंदाया (मारे or मादा) द्रेगेशायादी I will buy what you want. EN. 34. ME. 1

ਨੌਤ' (ਸ੍ਰਾਵੇ' or ਸ਼ਹਾ) ऒ੍ਰਿਪਾਰੇ'ਫ਼ਲਾੜ' I do not know exactly what they cost.ब्रा-वेशणी सेरा

ট্রিমে (শ্মি or শ্মি) ব্রিমেট্রিম I will give him what you like. यादेरकामिलाड्रेरालेटा।

The other Impersonal Correlative Pronouns, which are more forcible than नारे and नार What, That which, namely, नाराधार, TICHE, and TICHE, WHAT SO, WHATEVER, WHATSOEVER, ANY-THING THAT, and, with a negative, Nothing that, may be illustrated thus :--

र्वे रेशमारे वेद्यापर समार्थे दर्म। मॅरिशमारे मुर्पारे अदायमार्थे तरुमा ୖ୶୕ୖଽ୶୴<u>୲ୖ</u>ୢୠଽ୳ୖଽ୴<mark>୵୴୳</mark>ୖ୶୕ୡୢୢଵୄ୲

श्रीरे मार मार वेर य रे अर अमिर्य **८**५मा

मिंद्र देते । सिंद्र सिंदे बदाया मा दे पेंद्र या देते । श्रेते श्रेट मी बट यमा रे खेर य रेश खट मिं दे र्श्वेन।क्रास्य न्वर मुन्येर। Or :=

Whatever, or anything that, she does is good.

He can tell the price of anything that, or whatever, is in your house.

Whatsoever is in a man's heart will influence his whole life.

--

will influence his whole life.

Whatsoever is in a man's heart

मृष्ट्र श्रीमा सिटायमीला स्टर हा हैश. भूष्ट्र श्रीमा सिटा जानाटा नाटा स्ट्रा रा हैश.

हेर-मुै'भेर। हेर-मुै'भेर।

Or :--

पड़ेर.लूट.। पड़ेर.लूट.। पड़ेर.लूट. थ.चट. पर्येची. य.लट.टश.चूर्ट.

Or:--

हेर खेट । हेर खेट ।

न्मुशः ग्रामः वे**न् बाध्यम् हिं**सः श्चेनशः वेन् श्चेः ऑसः ।

Or:--

५मुशॱम्दॱवु५ॱयॱ६ेशहेंद्दः श्लुवशः वुे५'णुै' अॱ२ेंद्र। I will give you anything that, or

whatever, is in my power.

Nothing that the enemy does will save the fortress.

हिंद्र-देशन्वादाययायादीयात्रात्रात्र्यात्र्यात्रीयाः वी सामेद्राः You are right in absolutely nothing that you have said.

दशःमादः वृद्धाःयः ने 'बुद्धाः विना मी स्रोन्।

I recede from nothing that I have written.

মোনানামান্ত্রিমার্নিমার

3.—Literary Constructions.

(a) The following examples illustrate the Literary method of rendering relative clauses:—

রমধা হথ, বহুই , ধধা গু. লা গুনা নম ব্যম্প হথ, বহুই , ধধা গু. লা গুনা নম বুম গুটা , বহুই , বহুই , বহুই , বহুই ,

Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire (Matt. vii. 19).

સુર.શ.હુના.શહૂર.ભદ. | ૨૮.મી.શુમા.ખ. સુર.શ.હુના.શહૂર.ભદ. | ૨૮.મી.શુમા.ખ. ફુરે.મી.શ.૨૮.મી. શૈંધ.મી.શુમા. ખ.ભૂર. તડુ.

हुं मा.चज्र.ता. क्षश्याचीश. ट्यैंची. चथेची. तपुर.

देश्यश्चात्रः क्रियाः विष्णेषः यः देः क्रियः य्यात्रः स्ट्रियः स्

द्ये : ध्यः गुरुः दःयः महत्य्वे : सर्वे न् ल्यः देवसः स्यान्यः स्वात्यः स्वात्यः सर्वे न् ल्यः

দেশ প্রমাণ শ্রীক্ষানে মানুবান র্য় বীকা বারী নক্ষা প্রমাণ শ্রী কর্বা বার্ছীন ব্যা বীকা বারী

ম'নুসাৰ্ব ৰাম্বাদৰ ওম'ন্ত্ৰি'আও ম'ব'ৰিনা।

मार्शेर् 'यर' युः प्रदे 'यः खुन्। ${
m Or}:=$ मार्शेर् 'युदे 'यः खुन्।

म्रीयः देवे. स्ट. चर्चीयाश. वश. म्रिटं.ग्रीश. इ.ज्ञाच. तं. देवे. स्ट्रंच . स्ट्रंच स्था. म्रिटं.ग्रीश. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? (Matt. vii. 3).

The stone that the builders rejected the same was made the head of the corner (Matt. xxi. 42).

Render therefore unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's and unto God the things that are God's (Matt. xxii. 21).

And the glory which thou hast given me I have given also unto them (John xvii. 22).

The cup which my father hath given me, shall I not drink it? (John xviii. 11).

The works that I do in my father's name, they testify of me (John x. 25).

A man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed (Luke v. 18).

The calf that is to be killed.

And Philip ran to him and said, understandest thou what thou readest? (Acts viii. 30). (b) The Literary Correlative Pronouns are:—

श्.कृमा. श्र.

WHOEVER, WHOSOEVER, ANYONE WHO, HE WHO, etc.

네다.જી.

שוב.אב.

È or in certain cases &

페드.

नाट.बुना

नाट.शु.

चार.३५.

याद:दमाःक्रेदः

当け、それ、

શુ.ભાદ.

रु:प्र⊏

WHATEVER, WHATSOEVER, WHICHEVER, ANYTHING THAT, THAT WHICH, WHAT, etc.

The following examples will serve to illustrate the Literary rendering of the Correlative :— $\,$

सुस्र द' उना त' न्ना से वे**न** सन्स्र देन जै. सुस्र द' उना त' न्ना से वेन सन्स्र देन जै. He that is not against us is for us (Mark ix. 40).

રે. 'उडियो. थु. जूट. । सप्रे. थु. श्रेशका. २२. चेश. श्रोपट्रे. यीजः शुरे. र.ज. चोड्र्. यू.जचाश्व. चोड्र्. यू.जचाशः लुश्च. **बेश**.

Not everyone that saith unto me Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven (Matt. vii. 21).

कुर.चु. कुनास.चैर.। टूर.जीट.स्श. यश.चिश. चोशूज. श्रोप्तर. लू.२. यर.जश. वैर.भुर.यश्वराज.भुश.प.वशश.उर्य.जी.यट.

Among them that are born of women there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist; yet he that is but little in the প্রদর্শন ক্রান্থার বুলি । প্রদর্শন ক্রান্থার বুলি ।

kingdom of heaven is greater than John (Matt. v. 11).

हिंद्रिक्षं अप्तर्यायायाया स्थित विना।

Resist not him that is evil (Matt. v. 38).

मेड्टे. पर्वेश . टें. मुट्टेंट्र क्ष्य . क्षेत्र . क्षेत्र . टें. प्रवेश . टें. मुट्टेंट्र क्ष्यक्ष . क्षेत्र . कष्टें . क

With what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged (Matt. vii. 2).

स्तर्भिता । स्तर्भिता । ने निर्मास्तर महिना स्तर्भाति । स्तर्भिता ने निर्मास्तर महिना स्तर्भा

And whosoever shall compel thee to go one mile, go with him twain (Matt. v. 41).

हेंद्र-त्य-बुश्य-दर्देन्य-देन्य-क्षेत्र-क्ष्य-वेद-त्तु-त्य-दर्देन्य-देन्य-क्ष्य-स्ट्रेन्-हेन्।

Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away (Matt. v. 42).

शुः भटः हें ति हैं। ता ति मीता वा है। हुसः सुरः तकमा शुः ता हैं है। ति वे मा वाहु ता सुरः वहें। यर ति मुलः वाहु ता सुरः

And he that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces, but on whomsoever it shall fall it will scatter him as dust (Matt. xxi. 44).

मी.श्रॅमी.चर्चमी.सा.ट्रेश.श्लॅच.सट.उपीट.ट्रा ट्रेश.चर्चमी.सट.उपीटा शेश.पीट.टट. शेश.पीट. टट. मी.श्रॅमी.श्लॅच. सट. चर्ड्र्य.स.

Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it, but whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it (Luke xvii. 33).

कु.ट्रे.जश.पंबेट.ब.बेश.लट.शु.श्रुंश.कुं। सर.पंचेर। श्रेश.मेट.टश.कुंर.चप्र. श्रेश.मेट. के.पंटे. जश.पंबेट.ब.लट.शुंश. Everyone that drinketh of this water shall thirst again, but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst (John iv. 13).

होट क्या चेंद्र या देशसम् उदायसः मेंद्र स भेद्र । माट सादसा चुट या देशस्य स्था धेद देशसे माइसा चेंद्र यो ।

विट्रानीश नाटा अवेटा या प्रावेश यारी था प्रावेश माटा अवेटा या प्रावेश यारी था

र्गोर्शसर्क्ता हे. वेस्या केर. लेक्स में हिंदा त्रामक्षेत्र मणुरा होर्रा साकेर क्सस लेखा स्रामक केर्या हे. व्याप्त स्रामक क्स्य लेखा स्रामक केर्या हो. विस्ता स्रामक क्स्य लेखा

मट प्रवस क्षेत्राय के सेसस के राज्य । मट मुनस

थे.भ्रुश्चने.य.चश्चरश्चा ८.४८.हिन्.४८. ब्रोट.श्चेने.याम्ब.वे.य.वे.या.ने.लेब.ब्रे.।

श्रुशः गुदः दःवर्रः नेःदशः श्रुशः दःशेः स्टाःवः नेतेः सिम्मशः मर्छिन् स्मानमः लेगाः स्टिरःवः

હૈર. \$સશ. શુલશ. વર્ષિયો.રે. च? बા. શો. જોય. શે. જોય. ગોટ.ડે. ખે. જરે. વા. ઉદ્ધાનો. વર. ઉદ્દેશ ક્લાં He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is of the earth, and of the earth he speaketh (John iii, 31).

What he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth witness (John iii. 32).

God is spirit: and they that worship him must worship in spirit and in truth (John iv. 24).

That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of spirit is spirit (John iii. 6).

Jesus said unto her, I that speak unto thee am the Christ (John iv. 26).

Whosesoever's sins ye remit they are remitted (John xx. 23).

Unto everyone that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away (Matt. xxv. 29).

He that rejecteth me and receiveth not my sayings hath one that judgeth him (John xii. 48).

But he that troubleth you shall bear his judgment, whosoever he be (Gal. v. 10). श्रुशः णुरः रदः यद्दः स्राय्यः मुः मुम्राशः यः वद्दुर्यः रोः वद्दरः स्राय्यः मुः मुम्राशः यः

८.चर्टामाव.रुट्र.चर्व.त.लुव.ब्रे

বৃদ্ধে হা ব্যাহ্ব ওব নার্ন স্থান্ব বি বৃদ্ধি । মার্কুনা মেনাম র্য়।

माट र्बेन स्थान स्यान स्थान स्यान स्थान स

हैं सदेब्या है स्वर्ड्यमा है हिसस्य दिया स्वृत्या है दिनाया है स्पेद दुर्वेट या है क्लेब्या है दिनोया है स्वृत्द दुर्वेट या स्वृत्या है दिनोया है स्वृत्य क्षित्र स्वा But he hath seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true (John vii. 18).

It is his teaching who sent me (John vii. 16).

He who built all things is God (Heb. iii. 4).

That which was from the beginning, that which we have heard, that which we have seen with our eyes, that which we beheld and our hands handled..declare we unto you (I John i. 1).

Whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honourable, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue and any praise, think on these things (Phil. iv. 8).

X.—Indefinite Pronouns or Pronominal Adjectives.

1. In the Colloquial the following are the most common:—

ধ্ৰ'ন্বিশ' Some one; a certain (person).

মাম নিমা Something; a certain (thing).

मार्रे प्रीदःव

मारे भेरदाया (or भेरदाया) Something.

मा.रं.लेमा.

Nobody, None.

```
可に"以下" Any.
मारेखर
            Anything; or, with a negative, Nothing, None;
                Whatever, Whichever.
না.নাধা.
माट.चा. or माट.
All, Whole, Entire, Every, Complete, Full.
রমহা.এই.
ರ್ಷ.ಖ.
दमाद केंद्र Several.
सदः विश Most.
୍ଯାଜ୍ୟ:ସ:ଜିସା:
अत्राक्षि } Another.
5.2E.
₹.
             Each, Every.
 मार्नेश'गा' Both.
 দারীদা'দারীদা' One another, Each other.
 A.AN. Some.
 র্নার্ড A few, Few, A little, Little.
 দাউদার্থী Sole, Only, Mere.
```

নাউদাধে ভূম্ম্

Same; but দ্ব্দির That same.

ভূম্ম্

ইংম্ডিলাইন Various, Sundry, Divers.

55' Self, One's self.

স্ট্রস্থান Even one, Either. With a negative, None, Neither. ৪১৭১ Such.

EXAMPLES :-

্বুম'ন্ন্' (or বৃষ্ণাই'ন্ন্ন'ন্ন') ম'ন্ন' Once upon a time a certain Lama came from Lhasa.

त्रुः अर्दे र प्रमित्रं प्रमिश्चर हिना या देव र That same Lama went to a certain village.

द्वै श्रेम् । विन्त्र क्षेत्र प्रेम् विन्त्र क्षेत्र प्रेम् । I think he went to get something.

নিংখান দ্রিমারা দিনে আ রা আন দ্রীর রা রানি । No one went to Court yesterday.

शु'त्र'भट देन देन से भेट | No favour will be accorded

anybody. অহাশানেই স্থাংখন ব্রীক শ্রীক শ্রীক শ্রীক শ্রীক বিদ্যালয় Anybody can do this work.

र्शे दिन्दा नारे जेर या दे नाहीर त्या दिनु रा Anything that this man does turns into gold.

न्यमः न्याः स्थाः विते विदः विद्याः स्थाः मिर्द्यमः Out of the whole army not one man (nobody) was saved.

- भुँ द्वा ५२ भगोर्थे प्राप्त हा ल्या द्या प्राप्त This gentleman desires a cup of tea.
- र्ते हिल भा नु श्रम् उर् मर्नेन्स रॉन Soon afterwards the entire herd of cattle vanished.
- रे रेट हिर्देश्वर दे सुमार्थ मार्थे मारे स्पेर् Have you any good oranges to-day?
- प्रशामा ने प्राप्त प्रमाद केंद्र द्रोहिश मुं Several coolies will be needed for the work.
- ন্'ন্-'ম' ম' ম' ম' ম' ম' ব্যাদ্ভ হৈ ক্রিম্ম মাম্ম In India most people are very religious.
- नेंद्र गुः भुः द्रमार्थः विः वशः मुसः यः देः वः Some Tibetan officials are staying at Gúm (Ghoom).
- দান্ব্না (or অব্না) রমধান্ত্রাপ্তা All the others have returned to Lhasa.
- रेदे बर बरा मिल्याम प्राप्त हैं है म्लेर भारत Some of the others are staying in Darjeeling.
- प्राथान्य प्राथान्य (or म्रियान्य) न्यान्य Kindly give me another cup of tea.
- क्षे:रेक्ष:्व'र्खें:रे'त्थ:क्षे:क्ष्र्प्त्र: $Each\ man\ shot\ one\ stag$. \Box क्ष्र्र:रेक्ष:्व'र्खें:रे'त्थ:क्षे:क्ष्र्र्त्त्र: \Box क्ष्र्यः \Box

Or :--

श्रु.श्रु.श्रुश. में. भ्र. ज. जि. चर्चेचीश. ट्र.ट्र. सीज

Each man presented a complimentary scarf to the lama.

इन्दे दे त्या कु बेंब्र दे दे हे द दिन।

भ्र.म.५४५.भ्रम.१९४.ट्रा.चशिष्टःचशिषः **८**ड्रिम.

Give each horse a pail of water.

Each man carried three big boxes.

तर्ने सुम्मुम्मक्षेश्रामिते छा स स्मेत्।

दंश.चक्षर.श्रंट.। दंश.चक्षर.श्रंट.। This is the father of both the boys.

Both of us shot the bear.

युः क्राः क्रांस्या द्वां मानु क्षा मान्त्रीयका क्रांटः।

८२.२.५.चक्रिश.म.ट्रास.मी.५८।

Both the pretty girls have come.

Both this and that will be suitable.

क्रमा (दर्ग मिल्रिक्स ग्री हेंबर दमा मिल्रमा या से दर

Do these two words mean the same?

लचास । ने मार्केस गाँदे ने बना मार्केमा सः

Yes, both their meanings appear to be the same.

केंमा परेते रेंब रमार्टरेंदे रेंब रमार्टर महिमाय के राज्या Is the meaning of this word exactly the same as the meaning of that word?

यम्बा २ मान्स्य मित्र मित्र

No, both their meanings are not absolutely the same.

मुन्द्रमुम्द्रमार्डेट्रम्म्यम्

I want a few grapes.

मान त्रमा ने किंदी ना निमा केंद्रा था I want a few of those grapes. **5**শীম।

८.ज.रेटेज.ह्यू.ह्यू.ह्यू.च्यू.च्यू.

A very little money will do for me.

भे महिमायदे ५ स (or ५ स से महिमाय) אבי על קבאים אַבאי म्बरायर में निरंग निरंग ने

At sundry (various, or many Buddhas haveappeared in this world of ours.

दे के दि द गुला वा साम के ना देंग के ने देंग के नि

The lama was the only man among

क्रमायामारे द्रिया अमी तरमा अर्थी मी माउँमा र्रो रेर ।

Why be angry? She is a mere child?

८रे.मध्रेश. ग्रे.वट. वश्रामाद्यमा. मोश्राल्यट.मी. 351

Either of these two will do.

८ दे-निष्ठेश गुः बदः बद्धा निर्देश अदः दिंदा के Neither of these two will suit. **ダビ.** 1

भे भूट स्मास्य प्रेति वट वसम्बर्ग महिना अदः Of the entire thousand men not even one escaped. <u>चूर.श.शूट.</u> ।

Examples of KC Self, One's self, will be found at § 31, iii, IV.

Examples of नाउना नाउना One another, Each other, will be found at § 31, vii.

सर्पाद त्यस्य विमा द्या तरी तरी दर्श सर्वेट I have never seen such a difficult language. মান্ত্রি (pron. nyúng).

The following are the Literary equivalents of the above:-নাওনা'ওনা' Someone, Somebody, A certain (person).

ঠ'ন্বিশ্য Something, A certain (thing.)

मा.वश.)	
दमाद केंद्र	}	Some, Several, A good many, A good deal.
दम्बद्धः हिमाः		
पंचीय.लट.		
ୟ'ୟ'		
ज.ज.ब्रेची.		
म्राट, ब्रिमा. शु. ब्रिमा.	}	Anyone, Anybody, Whoever; or, with negative, No one, Nobody.
શું.ભદ.)	Everyone, Either, Each; or, with negative, No one,
בוב.מב.		Neither.
g.ML.)	Anything, Whatever, Everything, Either, Each; or,
उ विमा	}	with negative, Nothing, None, Neither.
্রমশ-ওই.		
गुद:	}	All, The whole, Every, Entire, Complete, All.
क्ट.भ.		
त्यत्.ब्रेमा		Mere, Sole, Only.
নাৰ্ব		Other.
म्बिद्धः वियाः		Another.
নাউদা'নাউদা	•	Each other, One another.
₹.)	
₹.₹.	}	Each, Every.
શ્ .શ્.	ĵ	
ं श्रामिरुमा'या	}	Various, Sundry, Divers.
S	1	

यट. <u>त्</u> . भेष.पश.झेचा.	Most.	
मिकेश.पी.	Both.	
ỗŁ.ᢓ.	Few,Little.	
हमा अप्तः अप्तः हमा हमा हमा हमा हमा	A few, A little.	
7597 75. 75.	Self, One's self.	
মুহুদা:ম: }	Same.	
रे:मिंक रे:माः रे:माः रे:माःमाः वर्रःसाः	The very same.	
२५.४२.य.) १.७.४	Such.	
শ্ব ্ৰ	Either, Each of two.	Ex. :

মাধ্যমান্ত্রীব্রা on each side of the two shores of (lake) Mapham (Jäschke). শ्रक्ष मानेश। Either, Both. Ex.:—

§ 32. Adverbs.

These are both primitive and derivative. Of Derivatives, some are formed from Pronouns, others from Nouns, and others from Adjectives or Participles. There are also Adverbs of Time, Place, and Manner, Interrogative, Negative, and (added to verbal roots) Relative adverbs.

Those derived from adjectives are formed either by putting the adjective in the terminative case, or by adding to the adjective the expression 5% 1 it is a common habit, however, in the Colloquial to use an adjective adverbially without changing its form.

Adverbs are always placed somewhere before the verb. Interrogative adverbs come immediately before the verb. Others may be inserted at any convenient place in the sentence, so long as the rule is observed that they precede the verb.

The following are some of the commonest adverbs and adverbial phrases used in the Colloquial:—

	Adverbs of Time.
বুম) বুম)	When?
म्।८	(Added to verbal infinitive) When, At the time ofing.
म्।रुश थर.	Whenever.
5 <u>₹</u> 1.	(Added to verbal root) $When$, used relatively; $While$.
5 'æ'	Now (at this time); うっぱってい Just now, At present.
5.42.2.	Hitherto, Up to now.
<u>રે.</u> ર્જ.	Then (at that time).

23

दे 'कुरु	Then (after that).
५ :४४:स्ट्रैम्:७५:	Hereafter, Henceforth.
र्था.लट.	Ever, Always. With negative, Never.
ৰম-দ্ৰীৰ	
तुरु:सुन: हमाय:रे:महेन	Ever, Always, Constantly, Incessantly, etc.
હ્યા }	When, Just when, About, At the time.
2.2c.mc.	
5.22.	Moreover, Furthermore.
र्निर्देश	
सुंद.	(Added to root of verb) Ever, with negative Never.
रे.इंट.श्रद.	N J
₹ Ε'₹Ε'	Now-a-days.
মহ্বমর্মার্মর্মর 👌	Now and then, Often, Sometimes, Occasionally,
रे.पंचाय.	with negative, Seldom.
ペピ.鉛ェ .	Again, Afresh, Anew.
র্ছ্য-মাত্রনা.	Once.
গ্রদেশ'দারুদা.	
ひか.女に.	At once, Immediately, Hurriedly, Hastily, Directly.
৲ 'ঽ৴ ক্ম'ন্তিনা'	Once more.
ব্:হ্র⊏:ঠ্র-শাতিশা: ∫	
ર્ક. વે≰ા. ∫	(With negative) Not at all, Never, In no case.
প্র-বর্ষা	(1100) 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

মুব্ৰাম A short time ago ${iggray}$ Formerly, Previously, 질록 A long time ago सर्गेमाश'र्येर' or सर्गेमाश'र्ये Quickly, Soon, Presently, Directly, र्रे.ग्रॅर. or र्रे.ग्रे. In a little while, In a few र्द्राना minutes. ন্থ্য প্রমান্ত্রী After, Subsequently, Afterwards, Next, Last, In future. At last, At length. 5'দা'ব্য' Already. 5'35" (Vulg. 円、料口 Lately, Recently. Zi Zi Late. Į · 디 · · · · · Early . दर्नेर यें स नेर पर Without delay. নামানামান Slowly, Gradually, Gently, Softly. ম্বদ্ধে বৃদ্ধে Last night, Last evening.

덕자건지 Eventually, Later on, Indirectly.

ব্দু (Added to verbal root) Just, Just about, On the point of, Going to.

5.7. Some time ago.

ናፙ, or ዓንፙ, or ፙ፝፞፞፞፞፞፞ዻጛ፞ This year.

ন্ত্রিদ্ধ Year before last.

ম্র নি ।

মান ক্রিমা

Next year.

মান ক্রিমা

মান ক্রেমা

মান ক্রিমা

মান ক্রেমা

মান ক্রিমা

মান ক্র

주경주 급충다 실·교·

ब्रॅं'रे:रे: Yearly, Annually.

के अन्त्रमा यारे प्रतिष् Daily.

रादःकुँदः To-morrow.

引流に To-day.

耳で Yesterday.

विनास दें दें Every day.

है संस्त्रेन Some day.

ADVERBS OF PLACE.

দ্যান্দ্র Wherever, Anywhere.

Note.—In Lhassa $\Im \Im \Im \Im$ Ďir, Here, Hither, is loosely pronounced as if it were spelt $\Im \Im \Im$ Ďir, i.e. something like the English word They, as pronounced by a Eurasian, with a slight dental d sound to the Th. Hence one sometimes sees the Colloquial form of Here, Hither, spelt $\Im \Im \Im$, which is not quite a correct form of the loose Lhassa pronunciation. Similarly one sometimes sees the Colloquial form of $\Im \Im$ There spelt $\Im \Im$.

Both 357 and 55 are incorrect. For the former the student should always use 355, or 357, when writing; and, if he chooses to affect the Lhassa pronunciation when speaking, he should say 358, not 355. For 55 he should always write 55, or 551

খ্ৰান্য Over there, Yonder.

W'मी Up there.

মানী Down there.

অংশ Upwards.

মান্ Downwards.

मुक्त $\left\{ \begin{array}{ll} Uphill. \\ \end{array} \right\}$

মৃহ' Downhill.

श्रम् सहमा स्मारा

सर्नो निविद्यास्य । Upside down.

মে.দুর্মা.

पर्ने प्रा Hence.

ই'বৃষ্ণ' Thence.

মানুধামা Before.

ইবিম Ahead, In front, Onwards, Forwards.

मुब्रा'य' मिल्ना'य' Behind.

श्रमा रेट रीं Afar.

ম'ম্নাম' Opposite, Over against.

あつい Instead of.

FA Just by, Close by.

বৃহা' Off.

र्म् प्रमाशासः Backwards.

মুন্মাম'ম' Outside, Without.

বৃদ্ধে Within, Inside, At home.

বৃদ্ধা From within, From home.

ট্র নিনাৰ্থ From without.

मार्भेदाया To the left.

নাম্মাম To the right.

মন্ত্র Together, Jointly.

নামানাম Everywhere.

ব্রমিশ্ম ব্রস্ত্রের্মে Around, Round about, All round.

শ্ৰব্'5 Elsewhere.

를록 5 Aside.

ই মান Asunder, Apart.

Adverbs of Manner.

বৃদ্ধী or বৃদ্ধ (The first added to root and the second to infinitive of auxiliary verb) Probably, Likely, Perhaps.

제다. 경조 } How ?

35'35' (pronounced DIN-DA)

तर्ने वर चिव

उद्ग.

वेदा.

चेश.

र्माः∄रः

子田子口

5'নাইর' Quite so, Just so, Precisely, Exactly.

ইম'ন্ত্র By degrees, Gradually.

55.5. (Used with negative.) Quite, Completely, Absolutely, Thoroughly.

रेदे मुन्द नुष्ठान्य Consequently.

Thus. So.

নাউদা হাঁ Simply, Merely, Only, Solely.

ጓር' Simply, Merely, Just, Only.

ই'র্মিঝ'বৃঝ'ঝঝ' Alternately.

স্থাম Almost, Nearly.

মন্ত্রমান্ত্র বিষ্ণার্থ মন্ত্রমান্ত্র বিষ্ণার্থ (Together, Jointly, Unitedly,

নি'নি'বুম' Separately, Individually.

র্মান্ত্রমান্তর Severally.

देंदेर नुष्ठावृष्ठा Singly.

युम्बार्श्स्यायदः महितः Formally.

প্রাম্ Merely, Only, Solely, Entirely.

প্র-বর্ষা

#বিষ্

অবার্টার or অবার্টা Well, with negative, Ill, Badly.

অ্মানা Better.

খেনা বিষা Best.

অ: Even, Likewise.

র্নান্ত্র Fairly, Honestly.

ত্ত'না' ত্রম'ব্ম' Carefully.

ইব'ইব'বৃষ্ণ'বৃষ্ণ' Definitely, Punctually, Steadily

ন্রিমার বার্মার Justly, Legally.

र्हेन सून टि. ब्रेंना Certainly. ম'ব্ম' Orally.

ችር Personally, Precisely, Exactly.

নামান্য প্রমান্তর Privately.

टेश'यर'

ন্দ্ৰান্ধ্যন্ত্ৰ ব্যাদ্ধ Really, Sincerely, Surely.

ZC. Į. Į & 1. 4×1.

মানুনামান্ত্র প্রমান্তর Promptly.

स्त्रम्पारानुस्त्रा Punctually.

Ordinarily, Usually, Generally, Universally, Chiefly, Principally.

প্রসাক্তির Decidedly, Exceedingly.

젊'독파'건 Clearly, Distinctly, Lucidly, Intelligibly.

বৃষ্ণ ক্রুব As a rule, Usually.

খ্ৰ'খ্ৰ' Indirectly.

न्त्राचाराताः Aback.

ইন্ট্রান্তরা Diligently, Zealously, Earnestly, Heartily, Genuinely.

८२ दे दिस्म अभारतः Herewith.

মহাই Easily.

নামানামা Gradually, Gently, Slowly, Softly.

(Between a duplicated adjective or adverb, with $\hat{\vec{\varsigma}}$ at end of sentence) Of course.

Adverbs of Quantity and Comparison.

দার্কিন্ How much? How many?

য়ম'র্ক্তম' Chiefly, Generally.

٣٢. Even, Likewise.

777 (Used with negative.) Quite, Completely, Absolutely, For the most part, Mostly.

র্বস', or in Coll. র্ব' About, Approximately.

হ্বনা'ন' } More.

सदः वेश Most.

कूद:ज़िंश Least.

5.35. Too; or add NE to any root; or add ATU as a verb to any root.

५ मिन् स्ट्रांस Scarcely.

 $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Enough}}$

পৃষ্ণ Only, Entirely, All.

র্নার্স Partly.

প্রতিষ্টা Much. With হল added, and followed by a negative,
Not much.

मिन्न्द्रशासदार्देश Many.

নার্থ্য । Yery many.

```
되다. 왕도' Too much, Too many. 
로다크로 Few.
```

35' Little.

র্নার্ড A little, A few, Some.

ME.

5'る下' 5'る下'叫下'

Besides, More yet.

35'NG' Too little.

Interrogative Adverbs.

मारे देंबाया नाःमीः देव दना 却도'진' Why? र्देब मार त શું.ખ. 3. ना.पर्दश. How? हे.केर. or शुःकेर. माट.पर When? वेका. না:বা मार्-इ Where? Whither? না.ধ.

चोट.वंश.

Whence?

শার্স্কর্ How much? How many? इ.द्य.

Adverbs of Affirmation, Doubt and Negation.

ননাথ. স,পেনাথ. মদাধার্থ M.ME. Yes.W.YE. यम्बरादेर এনাহা ঐ্ অনাহা-হার: No.মেনাহা-হার Rather (i.e. Than....) pleases. माउँमा नुरुष लुब.रा.पर् Perhaps, Probably. র্থার বর্নী चार.लूब.पोर. At all events, In any case. मारे'ॲक्स्ट्रट

वि'र्केश'सेन्'यर' Without doubt, Unhesitatingly.

ହ.너외. Rather, For the most part, Somewhat, Almost, Nearly, with negative, Scarcely. শূম্ম

र्भ:वद्य: At all, Ever. (With negative) Not at all, Never. প্রবর্থ

```
באימד.
चाट.च्राश्चारा
                  Surely, Certainly, By all means.
दुश्यापट.
                  By no means, Never.
                  Indeed.
          (Added to root of verb), Ever. With negative, Never.
۲۱.
                 Not.
शेर्'य
                 Not possessed of, Devoid of.
र्भर
                   Abbreviation of N'WY Is not, Are not.
হাব
                   Abbreviation of $1005 Is not, Are not.
 होर
```

As regards the Adverbs and Adverbial phrases used in the Literary language, it is hardly worth while giving a list of them, as the student can easily find them for himself in Jäschke's or Rai Sarat Chandra Das's Dictionary, or in Csoma de Körös's Grammar, where he will see how and to what extent they differ from the Colloquial expressions.

Examples of the use of Adverbs and Adverbial expressions in the Colloquial :—

स्तिरंगीशमार्थेशः वैयः वेतः (or जुवे)।

Whenever you can, get married.

मिर्नायार्स्ट्रन्णुः व्यर।

म् यम्यायत्र्रेम्।

मिना वशार्थेट मीतर्मा।

वित्रणुःखुम्भःमुःम् वाह्यम्भःमात्रद्रभःर्थेत्।

इन्देवे देवनार्वेद देन

व्यित्रः रेक्षः विद्यः यः यः यः योः यञ्जेषः वृक्षः तेत्रः तृष्यः व्यान्तेः रेत्रा

हिर्दि परि उपारे देवाय प्राप्त रहेर।

मिट.स.चर्चे. र्वेश.पंग्रीय.शूट. ।

श्रॅन्डिंग वृत्ति वृत्ति ।

लया.च वश. शूट. । चिट. रा.ज. क्रुंब. दश. व. च्रिंश . देगूट. शू. पू. चि.

ज्ञनी स्प्रिन् र्ड मिं दिनीय सेंद्र ।

मिं चलुनाश दश कु र्वे र मा र्वे र सिंट ।

ब्रिट्-झे.श.ज.स्रेय-ब्रेट्-ट्य।

ग्रीट.। (brour united) त्रीय.भा.

मिंद्र-देर-वमायट मुक्ति स्टिंग

Where are you living?

Whither is the monk going?

Whence comes he?

How is your mother's health?

What is the price of that horse?

What o'clock is it now?

What have you built yonder house for?

Why have you come here?

While the house was being built, it collapsed.

He died about dusk.

When he went home he ate his dinner.

When he was eating, he fell.

How long (how many hours) is it since he died? i.e. was alive.

Have you ever been to Lhasa?

No, I have never been to Lhasa.

Will you ever go there?

के स उवा र हा स य दर्वी मी भेद य ५५ Some day I may go to Lhasa. or धेव में।

ट में से या अट में का से हिंदा। I have never even been to Chūmbi. (pron. nyúng.)

भ्रामट रार्ट हैं ता इ क्या (or स क्या) Many people have never been to the hills at all. त्रुवःश्रःश्र्राः।

The hills are very far away. रे.क्र्.समा.रूट.समा.क्र्र.पर्मा।

झ्र'र्न'रु'उट'वना'रेट'र्देग्सः (or वना'रेट' Lhasa is too far away.

वनाकर्) ५५म। Moreover, Lhasa is too cold. र्र्रिःश्रंश्रंश्रं

That is not all. There is much रे वस्र उर्जेर । र उद स्ट में पेर more yet.

५:३८:३:४१:०।३५:मुः वेदः ये प्रतः शे थेरः। Furthermore, there would not be much to do in Lhasa.

I would rather stay in Darjeeling व्रासाया वर्गी या यसा है है ब्रीटाया क्रेंदाय than go to Lhasa. नमाद मी रेरा

क्र-मिर्या-टार्स दे-रसमा-र्याटार्स-सं-सा-सा Our troops once went to Lhasa. येव:श्रॅटः।

They may have to go there again; 5.云下 (or Vulgar Coll. 5.名子) ある or, Perhaps they will have, etc. माउमा देर द्यों द्यों मा भेर पाद ।

ट. ये. मीट. मी. लेका जा. ते बे बे अ. जू. च के मी के श Twelve years ago I went to Europe. 蚁Ľ.I

How old is that tree? विद्यमार्थेनार्वेद देता How old are you?

हिंद्र त्यें मार्केंद्र ध्येव।

र्यः अटः क्ष्यः (or नत्त्रम्) दशः रुषः (अटः क्ष्यः) क्षेटः तरुम् ।

I read that book some time ago.

र्धेकायार्थेकायहमात्यायहेरायारेत्।

Anciently (of yore) the five prefixes were pronounced.

देटक्टाह्रिणुःश्रेषदुन्।

Now-a-days they are not pronounced.

८४:५२:४:५:म्। यः अ८:क्रे५: श्रुवः गुःसः ८५म। I cannot find the book anywhere.

नदः धेर गुदः दशः देः दः व्रः अर्वेदः नीः श्रेः वदन्ता At all events I do not see it now.

पर्-इ:<u>स्व</u>ा।

Come here.

95.2.4.ME.1

Do not come here.

प्रश्रदाष्ट्रा. यू. स्ट. मुक्त स्ट. ।

They went away yesterday.

おお、おた、など、動力

Go away immediately.

मी.पर्नेम। एप्रेंच.रज्ञेच.य्येष.मीश्राच.

My teacher speaks very distinctly.

र्नुशः मुक्रा विशानः उदाः अमुनिशः यो बेरः मीः पर्ना।

He always speaks very fast.

I do not understand him easily.

ঀৢৼ৽য়ৣ৽ঀৼ৽ঀৼ৽য়৽ঢ়ৢঢ়৾৾ঀ

Do not make so much noise.

ब्रिंदःदेशःभूत्रःकेषःचेरित्देःत्दः कुवःष्यंदेषः दमानादेःदेद। Why are you talking so loudly?

র ম' ৭১ ট্রিন্ ম' শ্লব্ ক' হল ই। ব' শ্লবা ন্বব্দট্টিন ম' শ্লব্ This lama is only telling you the truth.

ट्र. इट. व्रिमश्च. राष्ट्र । व्रिमश्च. व्यास्य व्यास्य व्यास्य ।

The judge came to court very early to-day.

প্রম: ক্রিন্ট্র: ক্রিন্ট্র: ক্রিন্ট্র: or ব্রীব:

Probably he will be late to-morrow.

र्ज्ञ रट्मा समा ५ साहित स्मार्क्त सार्कः

Just now it is terribly hot in Calcutta.

च्चित् र र न्योश निज्ञ । विश्वश विष्य विश्व । विश्वश विष्य विश्व । विश्वश विष्य विश्व । विश्वश विष्य विश्व विश्व ।

Take the money to court personally.

द्र। शु.मी. क्ट. क्ट. ५२. च्य. महिंद्र.मा.५५४.

How old is this little child?

तर्नेतर्वे मान्स्र स्मायाय।

What pleasant weather!

तर्ने तर्दे सुम् शयम् श्रीयायाय।

What a cutting breeze !

तर्नेतर्दे अम्मामाया

What an excellent road!

95.428.B.9.2.4

What an enormous dog!

तरे'त्रते' स्थाना भें भाषा ।

What a thick branch !

५रे.५५५.ये.स्स.स.स.स.

What a beautiful girl!

र्नेनार्ड सुनार्सेन्। हिन्यमेन्य स्थारीसिम स्थारिक स्वामारी स्वा

Wait a little: why are you so impatient?

हिंद्रिणुश्यः विद्यास्य साम्य दे नहिंदि हैं स्वामाः स्टेर्ना

Why are you building this house?

शुःमुः५५ ५५ मारायः हःमो ५५ न।

Why is the child crying like that?

मिल्ना द्रा वस्र अन्य मिन्द्र अन्य से अर्थे द्रार द्रार (or Coll. 도착)

Have all the servants gone on ahead ?

८८.ज्. चामश. ब्रुंचाश.ज. ट्रे. वश. चार्लुब. र्युनाश्रायाः द्वीत्रत्वशाद्देनाः र्वे । ताः श्रृनाः तानां श यः यद्धः मार्रेशः सं दर्गे दर्गेशः ग्रे दे ।

First you must turn to the right. then to the left, and then go straight on for a distance of about twelve paces.

हिर्यामान्ये सम्बद्धाः यास्यम् याद्धाः याद्धाः सा **इन्दर्ग**र्हरः।

When you reach the road end. shout to me.

मिट्यं दरे था है है मा रामा था थेर।

There are rats everywhere in this house.

गात्मगान्द्रवस्ट्रे हे ब्रीटव्यवनार्द्राः ब्रुटना र्वेद:रेद।

How far is it from Calcutta to Darjeeling?

यगतः ह्वेंब सुदाई है स्वीदावशाशना के देंग्येंद न्म। वनारेट र्योरे**र**।

Is Kalimpong close to or far away trom Darjeeling?

To pray is of course very excellent. मार्शेयः यः यदयः यः देः अमार्थेः दः अमार्थेः **२**५२।

§ 33. Postpositions.

What we call Prepositions, such as Of, To, In, On, By, With, From, About, Concerning, etc., and certain Prepositional phrases like By reason of, For the sake of, With respect to, According to, Instead of, etc., are rendered in Tibetan by Postpositions, some of which are simple, and others compound.

The Simple Postpositions consist of the primitive particles which are used in the formation of the Cases. (See § 25.)

As regards the Nominative Case, no such particles are used. $(See \S 25, I.)$

As regards the *Vocative Case*. (See § 25, II.) As regards the Accusative Case, no particle is necessary, but if desired the Postposition A' may be inserted. Ex.:—

मिंशसुः श्रॅं नुस्रश्यें नुेरणी वर्मा।

Or:--

He loves the girl.

मिंश सुः से त्या सुस्र सः से देन कु ति तुना।

With this case the postpositions \P , \P , and \P , as far as, Up to, To, Till, are used.

N.B.—The following verbs may be used either with the bare accusative or with that and the postposition \mathbf{A}

ষ্ঠ্যান, নাৰ্থানা, ব্ৰুমানা, মূত্ামা, To give, to deliver.

র্বিনা, প্রানানা, To teach.

तुरुपः, मिन्द्रपः, To tell, To explain.

क्रिंग्य, सुरादनेवशं बुच, सुरावदर बुच, To show.

জ্'ন', To petition, To beg, To offer.

त्रिपा, To fear, To be afraid of.

ব্র্যান্ত strike against.

र्हेम्सर्नुर्यः To help, To aid.

प्रिन्धिर स्प्रिंग्यः To bring.

As regards the Genitive Case, the particles are $\tilde{\eta}$, $\tilde{\eta}$

भुना ने अर्ने। The sheep's head, or the head of the sheep.

म्राप्त र हैं। The bull's horn, or the horn of the bull.

यभः भूतः गुः भूतः भूना । A dialect of the Colloquial.

प्रमात्मेयाणी मिटा। Price of bread.

সুমান্ত্ৰীর্মা The foolishness of pride.

PE'ন'ন্ন্ন মের্ল ক্রা The height of this house.

मार्भादे मार्थ मार्भादे मार्भादे मार्भादे मार्भादे मार्थ मा

The woman's name.

The danger of uncertainty.

The wisdom of the East.

The law of custom.

The height of that house.

The end of a chapter.

The handle of an axe.

The colour of a turquoise.

As regards the Dative Case, the particle used is Q' (see § 25, V).

As regards the Agentive Case, the particles used are ম', শ্রীম', গ্রীম', বিম', and ঋম' (see § 25, VI). Ex.:—

मिंश सु सिंग दुन्म सिंग दिन पुणि सिंग शिक्ष the girl.

নুমানুনার্মান্য The hawk killed the pigeon.

द्रुमामिश्नुः तः ज्ञामि दुम्। The dragon is eating the moon.

८ ८ ८ में अप्तार के दे में मार अप्ता I have read that book.

્રેન્ટ્રિંગ્ પુરાસર્દ્દના નુભાસા વર્કેસ સિંદ દશ $oldsymbol{H}$ ave you hurt your finger ?

নিবি'প্রেম্বর' (or রহা') নিনিবর্ষ্ণ His father taught him.

蚁仁.1

मिंदे न्त्रिम् अर्धेश प्रश्ना नुसार्थेद । His companion did the work.

रुप्त नीकार्थे निम्ह्य गीप्त ना। Weeds are choking the corn.

ਜ਼੍ਰੀ ਸ੍ਰਾ.ਪਸ਼.ਸ਼੍ਰੀਸ਼.ਸ਼੍ਰੀਸ਼ਸ਼ਸ਼ਾਂ ਤਰ੍ਹੇ ਸ਼੍ਰੀ ਸ਼੍ਰੀ \mathcal{H} \mathcal{H} \mathcal{H} Discipline improves all men.

गुै.पर्या

ব্দাব র্ম্বর্ম সর্ক্রম মর্ক্রম মর্ক

तृद्धाः मुक्ताः स्थान मा Money ruined him. सार्विकाः मिल्या में म

This man helped him.

ద్రాబానికాడి ξ ద్రాలు ξ ద్రాలు

As regards the Locative Case the particles used are:-

$$\left\{ egin{array}{ll} A' & \\ A' & \end{array}
ight\} \ In, \ On, \ At, \ By, \ {
m etc.} \end{array}$$

বর্নু বৃষ্ণ Through.

5.
5.
5.
In, On, At, By, etc.

(See § 25, vii.)

As regards the *Periodal* or *Durational Case*, the particles used are **5** and **A**: At, In, During, etc.

(See § 25, viii.)

As regards the Modal Case, the particles used are:-

ላኝ By, Through, By way of, Via.

55 Against, With, e.g., with verbs of meeting, fighting, paying respect to, visiting, etc.

N' (Silent) With, Because, Since, etc.

 $\widehat{\mathfrak{Z}}^{\mathfrak{X}^{\bullet}}$ (Rather literary) By, Through, $On\ account\ of$, For, $By\ reason\ of$, etc.

As regards the Ablative Case, in the limited sense in which it is used in this Manual, the particles used are:—

AN Than, Except, Save, But, But for, Besides, etc.

$$\left\{ egin{array}{l} \P_{i}^{N} \end{array}
ight\} Unless.$$

(See $\S 25$, x.)

As regards the *Terminative Case*, which in this Manual includes certain aspects of what is usually called the Ablative Case, the particles used are:—

5, 5, 5, 8, and A, signifying Direction towards, and 5, 4, and A, signifying Direction from. (See § 25, xi.)

Of the COMPOUND POSTPOSITIONS, most are used with the Genitive Case. The following are a few of them:—

<u>र्</u> देशः)	About, Concerning, Regarding, With respect to.
र्नेन थः	On behalf of, For the sake of, With the object of, For the purpose of, In order to.
টুৰ্শী্য.	On account of, By reason of, In consequence of, Through, By, Because of.
원다.너. 첫다.너.	$Above ext{ (on top of), } Upon.$
MZ. or M.2.	Above (Higher up).
बंट.कंट. }	According to, As, Like.
_6	

Amidst, Among, In the middle of.

```
Behind, Back, Afterwards, Next.
                   Before (place), In front of.
                   Into the presence of.
                   Instead of, In place of.
42.421.
                   From within.
4七.切.
                   Inside, Within, In.
                   Just by, At the side of.
¥.11.
₹~
প্রদান্ত হাঁ (used with বৃষ্ণ)
うぎい During.
সুম্মে or স্থামে 

বুদামামে On the edge of.
 মৃত্য In reply or answer to, In return for.
              Below, Under, Beneath, After.
 The following are used with the Accusative.
```

স্ট্রেইন্ স্ট্রন্ With, i.e., Along with, Together with, In company with.

45.21321.2

5575 or 557557 Equal to.

5537 Near to.

スにえて、江 Far from.

প্রনা Until, For (time), As far as, For (space).

Save, Except.

EXAMPLES.

दश'नेवे 'नेव'या कंट' स' विस'गे 'थेर I

I know all about that,

मितामिती नेर स्था था येत पर यस मारी শ্লুম-ঘমগ-ওব-টুগ-ব্ল-।

Ask him all about his journey to Tibet.

प्रेनेंद्र-दमामो बदः यहेदः से प्रदमा। श्रे के सुनोदे नेद में श्रीश विश्वेर ।

This is not according to reason.

मिन्नोब प्रदेखर यह प्रहास दे ।

The people died in consequence of the famine.

रस्या से कें अस यस मोहेश या द्वीं मी दर्गे मे नुस्य रेता

He behaved like a fool.

रेंद्रे. य. मी. श्लंद. ज. मोटश. बेर.त्र्. रूट. श्र

The soldiers used to march after the Amban.

दर्भः अद्यायाः अद्यो

There is not much snow on that hill.

मिं कें नियान देव में किये दूर र प्राप्त साम 351

Do not walk before me.

ल.ची.रेष्ट्र.जब.ट.ज.चूश.चळचा.ला दिन् गुःमिञ्जा देः नेश्वायः कें न्यायः अभानः They came into the presence of the Dalai Lama.

येक्ट्रियामा रेन

Let me write in reply to that letter.

Your servant may go with the coolies.

ধানী বিদ্যান্ত (or বহারু) চার্চ Come with me as far as that house.
মানুমার্ ব্রিনা

§ 34. Conjunctions.

1. In Tibetan the use, as in English, of Conjunctions like And and But is generally avoided, and the sentence is reconstructed, so as to begin with a subordinate participial clause, of which clauses there is often a long string before the principal verb is reached.

EXAMPLE:-

Here the sentence is turned into: That house not being mine, I cannot give it to you.

Not being, the negative form of the participle present of the verb To be, is rendered ইাস্মামা The affirmative form Being, would be ইন্মামা, or ইন্মামা

2. But where the Disjunctive idea is sought to be expressed the form 5'W\Gamma' is used thus:—

Here the sentence is turned into: Though that house is mine, (yet) I cannot give it to you.

3. It would be quite allowable, however, to avoid using the Conjunctions altogether, and simply say:—

- 4. Instead of J'WL, as above, WL alone, or JL according to the final of the preceding word, or the gerundial particles $\hat{\zeta}$ (after final ζ), $\hat{\zeta}$ and $\hat{\zeta}$) or $\hat{\zeta}$ (after final $\hat{\zeta}$), $\hat{\zeta}$, $\hat{\zeta}$ and all vowels) may be used. Thus:—
- দ্রাম্প্রম্পর্ম (or র্মির্ম্ন) Though that house is mine, I cannot give it to you.

 ਤੇ মেন্দ্রির্মান্থ্র সূত্র স্থান বি
- 5. Another way of expressing the same idea is the following:—

 [মেমেমেনিমের মার্মের (or মার্মের) As, since, or because the house is not mine, I cannot give it to you.

 বিমেন্ত্রিমেন্ট্রমেন্থ্রমন্ত্রীমৌর্ম্বা
- 6. As illustrative of similar formations in connection with verbs other than $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{-}\mathbb{Z}^{r}$ and $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{-}\mathbb{Z}^{r}$, note the following:—
- मारसासराधानिका दाया प्राप्त हों हो हो हो दाया Though it was snowing hard I set out for Darjeeling.

नादशः सदः द्वाः ववसः गुदः दः हेः हो हो दः तः Ditto. वेदः यः प्रेवः।

ক্রম্মান্রমান্ত্র (or ব্রম্ভারে, or because it was not raining I set out for Darjeeling.

ক্রম্মান্ত্রমান

- ক্রম্মান্ত্র (or ব্রব্মান) As it is not raining I shall set out.
- कर प्राप्ती प्रवाद क्षा प्राप्त प्रवाद की की बार कार्य and set out.
- 7. The expression Either...or, is rendered by भाष्य, or by

लट.व.कर.त.चटश.चीच.ठचूं.रूरे।

Or :--

कर'यत्अ'मारअ'द्यय'द्यों'रेर्।

Or :--

कर याधार बनादशादयय दर्गे रेर्।

Either it is about to rain or about to snow

गुः नार्डे में भर सेन न मिंदि तमें नारेद Either, lord, you will go or you will hang.

ব্রা-বর্গর-সূত্র-।

टा**अ**ट क् न्याया भेका भटा होकाका न्या । भेका

Or :-

Either I am right or wrong.

८:८म्यः ध्येदः दशः श्रेदः दशः । इ:इ:४:०:०८ ५मः मात्रः श्रेरः ८५मः ।

Is the horse in the stable or not?

8. If is rendered by the expression স্থাই or স্থাই তা, as is more usual, by ব alone. Thus:—

मात्राः श्रीदः दः दन्। दाः स्पिदः दः (or दन्नाः दः) If I am right, or if I were right.

Or simply :—

८:६मादाःॲ५:४: (or ५५मान)।

Ditto.

The second and third persons also take this $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$'s or $\mathsf{R5}$'s Thus:—

हिँदिनायाधिदात (or दर्नात्)।

If thou art, or wert, right.

बिंदिनायाधिदःबः (or दर्नाक)।

If he is, or were, right.

So with the verb To have: -

দ্মে নর্মান্ত (or ব্রুদান্ত)। If I have, or had. good fortune.

And similarly for the other two persons.

With verbs other than $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{5}}$ and $\widehat{\mathbb{C}}_{\overline{5}}$ (To be, or To have), the conditional sign $\overline{5}$ is simply added to the verbal root, Present, or Perfect, for all persons. Thus:—

ਨੇਂ ਉੱ ਾਤੇ But if, is confined to Literary Tibetan.

9. Expressions like Ago, and Since, in the sense of From the time that, are rendered thus:—

চ্ধা-বি.ম.ঘ≌ধা-ব্যাসূ-মাধীসা-গুচ্.। ⊙ь:— চথ-বি.ঘ≌ধা-ব্ধা-সূ-মাধী-মাধুচা-।

Three years ago I ate meat; or, It is three years since I ate meat; or, I have not eaten meat for three years.

10. Our common conjunction And is expressed by 55° meaning with, used as an enclitic, but only the first two nouns in a series are connected by it, however numerous the series may be. Thus:—

รูष:र्जेर्-इट-दुष: द्वनष:र्ट-प्रकेन्यश्यु Time and tide and death tarry for nobody.

Between two Imperatives, especially in Literary Tibetan, And is rendered by A. Thus:—

र्वेना भार्नेश निन्। Come and see.

In Literary Tibetan, moreover, in addition to 55 and A, And and But are rendered by W5 and J5, and by the gerundial particles

 \mathfrak{F} , \mathfrak{F} , or \mathfrak{F} , and \mathfrak{F} , \mathfrak{F} or \mathfrak{F} , especially in sentences in which And occurs frequently, and it is desired to vary the particle. Thus:—

च्याः अति । के. विष्यः समित्राः स्वर्षः । के. विष्यः समित्राः सम्बर्धः ।

नुसस्यस्ति नेस द्राह्म हिरामस्य न इसस्य उद्गतिस हे हैं निस्य या गुरु द्राह्म इसस्य उद्गतिस हे हैं निस्य या गुरु द्राह्म नुसस्य सेद्राह्म व्याप्त स्थापित हो।

Eating flesh and drinking blood (Das).

Tall and well made. (D.)

Heat is hurtful (but) cold is beneficial. (D.)

As you are of high and noble birth. (D.)

If I have prophecy and know all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have all faith, so as to remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. (1 Corinthians xiii. 2.)

Come ye out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord. And touch no unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be to you a Father, and ye shall be to me sons and daughters, saith the Almighty. (2 Corinthians vi. 17, 18.)

11. In the Colloquial WC or, after final T, T, T, or N, TC may signify And, Either, Neither, or Nor, according to the context. At the beginning of sentences the following are common: To However, But, Well; WTTC However, But, Moreover; TTM Then; TTM Then; TTM Then; TTM Then, In that case, Consequently.

EXAMPLES :-

लट.क्रुंश.चुना।

And behold.

वुःसःगाराध्यदाधिदायासारेद।

There is no sugar either.

दें सायदासेत्।

Nor milk.

वें क्वेंरणूट भेर।

Nor milk-jug.

भैवःगुदःहिँदःयःदमेँशःव।

However, if you want them.

Then the judge said to the prisoner.

الدر

र्देश मुक्त मुक्त द्वा द्वा क्षित् प्राप्त का प्राप्त

त्रित्रम्मिद्रसायासासह्रदस्।

Well, don't be angry.

The Literary equivalent of भेज्ना Eut, However, is देन मुद्दा

12. Whether is expressed by using the interrogative duplicative suffix. Thus:—

८:५ना सि:२५ ५स:से५: ५स:सुझ: वेश:गीः ५५ना

Whether I am right or not, who knows?

रे मिन् मिना क्षेत्र क्ष्य स्रेत्र क्ष्य प्रस्य प्रेत्र ग्री । स्रेत्र

Whether it is correct or not, I do not know.

Whether it will rain or not, who can say?

โล๊ ซึ่ลั ซึ่ลั ซึ่ลั ซึ่ลั ซึ่ลั ซึ่ลั ซึ่ลั Whether know

Whether he set out or not, you know.

13. Or may be expressed either as explained in clause 7 of this \S , or thus :—

मिं ब्रेंनाक्षणी तरुमानामान क्रिंसमी तरुम। Is he hungry or thirsty?

14. As to the use of Conjunctions with Numerals, see § 26, II, Note 3.

§ 35. THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB W7.4. To be.

The primary meaning of this verb is To exist, To be present, but it is often used attributively, i.e., as a mere copula to connect subject and attribute, and also as an auxiliary to other verbs.

As a substantive verb and when used attributively it may be conjugated thus:—

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Affirmative.

There being no difference between the singular and plural constructions, only the singular will henceforth be given.

with and and an above with the third person, may also be used for phrases like There is, There was, There are, There were, etc. Thus:—

র্নু ন্মান্ত্র ক্রিন্ত্র ক্রিন্ত্র

آرج کراتی also may apparently be so used when an emphatic or positive statement is intended. Thus:—

According, however, to Mr. C. A. Bell, $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ' $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ' implies uncertainty.

The future root আঁচ, for all persons, is sometimes used for the present tense, when vagueness or indefiniteness is implied. Thus:—
ইচেমেনীই বৃচ্মেমিমেডবুই বৃদ্ধার্ট There are wild animals down in that valley.

An Intensive form of $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}}, \widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}}$ is $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}}, \widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}}, \widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{5}^{\mathsf{T}}$ similarly conjugated, but not now in use.

An elegant Literary form, not much used however, is:-

পতুর.

I am.

मार्दः

Thou art.

মঠম', or শ্ব্ব', or মঠম'ম'মীর। He is.

And the Respectful form is:-

বৰীমাগ্ৰ.

I am.

אבת.

Thou art.

নৰুনাম, or মনে, or নৰুনাম:মান্ট্ৰা

He is.

Negative of W5741

८.५.२.सूर्

I am not there.

हिंदिन के जिल्ला के ज

Thou art not here.

मिंदिरें दिसेर, or सेंदिर्म, or सेंदि He is not here.

यासारेत्।

Interrogative Form.

্রের্ডির র্মির্ন্র, মির্ন্ত্র, or মের্ন্ত্র, or মের্ন্ত্র, or মের্ন্ত্র, or মের্মের্

Attributive.

「田田 good. 所で、いて 名与門 Thou art good. 所で、いて 名与門, or 说「 He is good. ロマネトー

Colloquially, $\mathbf{W}^{\mathbf{T}}_{\mathbf{T}}^{\mathbf{T}}$ is sometimes pronounced Ya'-pu, instead of Ya'-po.

In some phrases, like the following, 357 and not 57 is used with the first person; probably because there is really no nominative "I," but the construction is "There is to me."

ट.डि्म्थिश.ग्री.पर्नेमा ट.डि्म्थिश.ग्री.पर्नेमा

I am hungry.

I am thirsty.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

This may be formed just like the Present Indicative, the context generally sufficing to show what the tense is. Thus:—

Affirmative.

र्श्वन्याद्युमार्थे Was rich once.

र्ध्व अपित सुना रिप्पेन, or तन्न। Thou wast rich once. र्ध्व अपित सुना रिप्पेन, or तन्ना, or He was rich once.

व्यद्भार्य देता

Apart from contextual indications as above, this tense may also be formed with the aid of the auxiliary verbs 🖏 🛪 and 🖘 🛪 Thus:—

Affirmative.

T'A T' T' WA | I was here.

ট্রিনের উন্থান্র্না, or occa- Thou wast here.

sionally WTTTT

મિંત્રે' રું પાર્ત્ર પાર્ત્ર, or occasionally He was here.

ळ्ट.च.पर्चा।

Negative.

८ १६ १५ १५ १५ १५ (vulgarly अन्) । I was not here.

हिंदिन दे दिस्त स्थान स्यान स्थान स्यान स्थान स

Thou wast not here.

He was not here.

Attributive.

८:सुनाः संभितः सम्भेतः। हितःसुनाः संभितः सम्मेतः। वितःसुनाः संभितः सम्मेतः।

I was rich.

Thou wast rich.

He was rich.

Interrogative.

८.८५.२.१.२.१.४.१ or भूषेत्राचा, Was I here?

ট্রি-রের্-ড্র-অর্ম-রর্ম (or মহা Wast thou here? or ম'), or অর্ম-মান্দ্রমা (or মহা, or ম)।

मित्रै र प्रेर् पर्रे र प्रेर् स्थ (or प्रा, Was he here?

And so forth.

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as the Imperfect Indicative. Thus:

ર્ફેન્સ'દ'લને કુંપોના I have, or had, been here before.

And so forth, throughout all constructions.

FUTURE.

The Future Simple is expressed Colloquially by $\begin{tabular}{l} \begin{tabular}{l} \b$

Attributive.

רְישִׁקְ'ֹקְ'שִׁרְ', or, in Literature, I shall be good.

्च ब्रास्ट्रां र त्युर रे ।

ਜਿੱਤ ਅਸਾਹਿੰ or, in Literature, Thou wilt be good.

वबर स्राप्त विवर रे

নিম্নার্মি, or, in Literature, He will be good.
নারাম্নের্নুম্ন্

N.B.—5 or 57 in Literary Tibetan should not be used as a mere copula to connect subject and attribute, nor should it be used substantively, but only as an auxiliary to verbs.

Negative (Col.).

E、名字、多彩、郊下!

I shall not be here.

८.लच.च्.श्रु.लूट.।

I shall not be good.

And so throughout, inserting & before WK'

Interrogative (Col.).

Shall I be here?

E'MPITI' WE'EN'

Or WE'EN | Shall I be good?

Shall I not be here?

Shall I not be here?

Shall I not be good?

And so throughout. Also with W, or W. Thus:—

Shall I be good?

The other tenses (which really represent the Conditional) are as follows:—

Literary.

८.४५.१.१.५५.४४.४५

I shall be here.

And so for all persons.

८.४५.२.छूर.तर्मीर.त.स्रीय.

I would be here.

हिंदिन देश्या स्थान स्था

Thou wouldst be here.

or 3531

विंदः वर्रे दुः व्यरः सुरः यरे रे रें,

He would be here.

or ८५ुमा:में।

दः ५२ दे दे स्प्रें स्प्रें दे स्प्रें स्प्रें

I would have been here.

ब्रिं-पर्-ड-प्येन्यर-मुर-य-पर्मानी। ब्रिं-पर्-ड-प्येन्यर-मुर-य-प्यन्नी, Thou wouldst have been here.

or तुन्माना, or धर्मारेर्हा

He would have been here.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Phrases like If I am, If I be, Should I bethen....I will or would be: or, If I were....then....I would be, or would have been, are formed, for the present tense, by using the expression নাম খ্রিন তেনি, or বিনুদার, or বিনুদার, or বিনুদার, or simply তেনি, or বিনুদার for all persons, and then using the future root থাঁটি. Thus:—

Attributive Present.

 Or :—

 Crægan संस्थित का क्षेत्र संस्थित ।

 Or :—

 Or

 Or

 Crægan संस्थित का क्षेत्र संस्थित ।

 Or

 Crægan संस्थित ।

 Or

 Or<

If I am, or If I be, or should I be, rich, I will be happy or comfortable.

্রি-শ্ব্রাইন্সি-র (or ৭5ুনার) স্ক্রীন If thou art, etc., thou wilt be happy.

मिं युना रो भिंद (or दर्गान) क्वेर रो If he is, etc., he will be happy.

For the past tense the construction is similar, save that \widetilde{W}_{5} : etc., for Would be, and \widetilde{W}_{5} , or \widetilde{S}_{5} , or \widetilde{S}_{5} for Would have been, are used instead of \widetilde{W}_{5} , though for Would be \widetilde{W}_{5} may also be used.

प्रमासियाँ (or त्रुमान) क्रीत If I were, or had I been, rich, I would be, or would have been, comfortable.

तर्ना, or वृष्टा

हिंदिश्चमार्थियं प्रिंदि (or बदुमाद) क्वेद र्थे प्रिंदि स्पर्दिमा, or प्रेद्देश or क्वेद्देश प्रिंदि, बदमा, or क्विर्य

If thou, etc., thou wouldst be, or wouldst have been, comfortable.

मिं धुनार्थि भेर (or तरुना त) क्वीर थे भेर थरेर, or भेर थत्रुना, or क्वीर थे भेर, or तरुना, or बुटा

If he, etc., he would be, or would have been, comfortable.

Substantively (Col.).

The construction is just the same as when used attributively.

Negative.

Same construction, but with A54 instead of A54, or 3545 Thus:-

ट्युन्यें सेन्द्रक्षेत्रें से सिटा

If I am not, etc., I will not be comfortable.

The Literary attributive construction is:-

८:युमार्थे भेरित्रवर्गनरे नरत्नुर रे

If I am rich I shall be happy.

दः श्रुम् ये व्योद्धान्य स्तुरः या व्योद्धान्य स्तुरः या व्योद्धान्य स्तुरः या व्याद्धान्य स्तुरः स्तुरः या व्याद्धान्य स्तुरः स्तुरः या व्याद्धान्य स्तुर

Had I been rich I would have been happy.

POTENTIAL.

Phrases expressive of ability to be present, or ability to be anything and other auxiliaries, added to the root of 454

Present.

८.८५.३.छ्रे. वि. or विराधितः or विराधितः I can be here. गी भी बा

ए.सम्हित्स्वर or ब्राजिट or ब्राचित I can be good. ग्रे.लुबा

Thou canst be here. or श्रवाणुःरेत्।

मिलमा ये भेर मुनः, or मुनः भेरः, He can be good. or প্রব'শূ'ইব।

Past.

 I could be here.

 I could be here.

 I could be good.

 I could be good.

PROBABILITY.

Present.

N.B.— ঊব স্থা, অন্মা, and similar expressions are sometimes written অব্দেশ্যা, অন্মা, etc. The correct form is probably স্থা, but this is not quite clear.

Past.

Similarly with খ্ৰাইন Good, instead of 35.3. Here.

Negative.

As regards the phrases in which অব্যাহ্য and অব্দ্রা occur, the negative construction is to change these into মাব্যাহ্য or মাব্দা, or নাব্যাহ্য , or নাব্দা Ex.:—

८.५२ चे स्थाप प्राप्त । Perhaps I shall not be here.

Literary.

This construction is in \$\sqrt{5}\sqrt{1}\cdot\ To be possible, combined, sometimes with the Verbal Root, but usually with the Infinitive in the Terminative case. Thus:—

다구·중·অ국·대자 (or অ국·) 월국·국! I may be there.
다구·중·অ국·대자 (or অ국·) 최·최국·국! I may not be there.
다구·중·অ국·대자 (or অ국·) 최국·대 I might be there.
교육·국!
다구·중·অ국·대자 (or অ국·) 최국·대 I might not be there.
최육·국!

다구궁·전국·선국·(or 전국) 최국·각·전국·국 I might have been there. 다구궁·전국·선국·(or 전국·) 최국·각·최국 | I might not have been there.

There is also another construction in AALT To calculate, reckon, used thus:—

It may be so; I reckon, or guess it is so.

HORTATIVE.

Phrases like Must, Ought, Should (in these senses), Need, Want, etc., to be, are rendered by means of 541517, or perhaps more Colloquially বিশান, or by that and other auxiliaries, added to the root of অবিধা Thus :-

Past.

८ दिन दे से द दे ने स्थाप or दे में स्थाप been here. To me it was necessary to be here. મિંદ પ્રદેશ પ્રાપ્ત કર્માં મારે તે or દુર્મોં Thou shouldst have been here. 32.1 मिन्दिरे उप्पेर दर्मेश यारेद , or दर्मेश He should have been here.

Or (instead of 35, or 357 for all persons.

N.B.—If there is an adverb to show the tense, the Past may be constructed like the Present.

PURPOSIVE.

Phrases like That...may or might be; In order that...may or might be; So that...may or might be; In order to be, etc., are expressed by means of the Infinitive put in the Genitive Case and followed by 55% or, in Literary Tibetan, 35%, or 55%.

८.४५.३.छूर.यह.र्रे. त्या

मिं नर्दन रें। पेर प्रते रेंन या।

That I may (or might) be here.

So that he may (or might) be safe.

The Literary construction is to put $\widetilde{\mathbb{Q}}_{5}$ ' in the Terminative Case followed by \mathfrak{Z} ' or $\mathfrak{Z}^{*}\mathfrak{Z}$ ' in the Genitive Case, and winding up with $\widetilde{\mathbb{Z}}_{5}$. Thus:—

디앤톡'디즈'크 (or 크'크) 축'- - That I may or might exist.

Or the construction may be in AJTT put in the Genitive Case and followed by ZTT Thus:—

ने न्ना श्रम्भ उन् नहिना नृ त्मुर नदे That they may all be one (John Xvii. 21).

IMPERATIVE.

१९४८ मुद्दाया प्रश्ति । Be here at midday.

Such an expression, however, would probably never be used in fact. A Tibetan would ordinarily say :--

If the idea of origination, or becoming, be implied, the proper Imperative would probably be 35. Negative राउउँ ।

Colloquially the Imperative of ううべ, or, more elegantly, コカップ or respectfully 커턴기가 To make, To do, To act, might be brought into requisition. Thus:-

গ্রিন্দ্রন্মান্দ্রন্ত্র্মান্দ্র্রাল্ডি be there at midday; i.e., Make to be here, etc. বর্ষ:পুনা:)

 $(N.B.-\hat{\Im}N$ is vulgar Colloquial. $\hat{\Im}\hat{\Im}$ is sometimes used instead of 5%, but 5% seems more correct.)

Negative:-

याम्बीरः or सेरामस्टित।

Note that in prohibitions the Imperative takes the Present Root of the verb.

When used attributively the Imperative of W5'X' is, in the Colloquial, formed with the auxiliary verbs うって, マカッマッ মার্ছির্মা just mentioned. Thus:—

अभेगिस'य'ने द', or निस' or निस' or सिर् | Be quick.

Negatively:-

अःधुः वा चुन् । (or वन्नि न, or अह्न)। Do not be late. Or:— খ্রীমান্ত্রীর (or বন্ত্রীর or মার্চ্র)।

Another way, which, however, is rather Hortative than Imperative, is to use the auxiliary verb 5 4 4 In this case, there being no real Imperative root, and what is said being only a statement of fact and not a command, the negative \mathfrak{A} , instead of \mathfrak{A} , is used. Thus:—

Do not be afraid. Literally, Fearing, or fear, is not necessary.

This also, however, may be expressed in the usual way. Thus:—
লিব্'ম'ন্ত্ৰিব্' (or ম'ন্ত্ৰীব্' or ম'ন্ত্ৰিব্') Do not fear; i.e., Do not make fear.
or ম'লিব্'ম'ন্ত্ৰিব্'

बहुब्राचहुब्राम्बदार्थेम्। श्रीदाहेरक्षेत्रयात्राचेत्रेत्म्।

Please be careful.

Please do not be cruel.

When addressing equals or inferiors familiarly, the following constructions may be adopted:—

अर्गुनाश द्या ग्रेन प्रा or ग्रुश भीना प्रा ।

Now then, be quick; or Do be quick.

Do be punctual.

A more Literary form would be :-

श्रेश्रश्चार्श्यः चरः गुरः द्वेषा छाटः ।

Now, do be comforted.

PRECATIVE.

Thus:

८.२८.च्.लूर.चक्रम।

८.२८.र्ग.लूर.चक्रमाक्रमा

८.४८.जू.लूर.चळचा. (कुचा.) सूचाश.चायट.

or रेनिशःग्रेरः।

८.२८.स्.स्.स्.च. (कुचा.) ४८.।

८.२८.श.लूर.चढ्चाखा

मिन्दारी ऑन् महुमा

दशः हिंदः दटाँयः खेदः बढुनाः शेः खेँदः

विश्वास्तर्दार्थे अत्यक्षमामी सेन्यशः,

or चष्टमा:लूट:दश

Let me be first.

Let him be first.

I shall not let thee be first.

Will he let me be first?

Literary.

८:५८:घॅ:ॲ५:यर-ढुमाडेम्। ८:५८:घॅर-ढुमाडेम्।

Let me be first.

Or:—The root of the verb 🏵 ་ང་་ང་ may be put in the terminative case, and the auxiliary verb གསོལ་བ་ used. Thus:—

८.२८.सू.जू.चे.सू.सू.सू.सू.सू.

Pray let me be first; I beg you to let me be first.

PERMISSIVE.

This is formed with the aid of ক্রীম' To be allowed. Thus:—

I may be here. I am allowed to be here.

Thou art allowed to be here.

He is allowed to be here.

I was allowed to be here.

Negatively:—

८.५१.३.लूर.भ्र.क्र्मा I may not be here. I am not allowed to be ८.५५.५.जूर.क्र्यामाः भेर।

८ दिने दें अर् केंन दा केंन or केंन का I was not allowed, etc.

蚁.1

Interrogatively:-

८. ५२. सं. लूर. कूचा मधा May I be here? Am I allowed to be ८. ५८. २. जूर. क्या.ची. जूर. रस । ८.४५.२.जूर.श.कूचे.चेश Am I not allowed to be here? ८.४५.३.७५. क्रुचामी भरास्या ८.५२.४.छ्य. क्यां प्राप्त क्यां or क्यां Was I not allowed to be here?

OPTATIVE.

This is formed with the aid of AT, the Imperative of ATT To come. Thus :-

다 (의) 국경쟁도 (리) 최기! Oh, or Would, that I were there.

The construction is the same for all persons.

In Literary Tibetan :-

다 (A') 학생학자 대학 Would I were there.

And so for all persons.

Infinitive.

র্মির্ম। To be present, To exist. Or, attributively, To be anything (e.g., good).

ऑर्'रा'पोब्'रा। To have been, etc.

ऑट मूं (or ऑट मुं) भेवय। To be about to be.

In Literary Tibetan the Infinitive is also \(\tilde{\mathcal{A}}\)5'\(\tilde{\mathcal{A}}\), but it is often seen in the terminative case, as w5'x1x'

हिन्दी : क्रिंच या हिना खेंना यमः (or खेंच यमः) हेन्द्रस्य श्रीसानेसार्से ।

We know that thou art a teacher.

That is, We know thee TO BE a teacher.

Again:-

বশ্বস। ট্রিব্-ট্রেম-মে-ম্র-স্থেন্-(or প্রথমন-)

Whom makest thou thyself?
Literally, Who thinkest thou that
thou art? That is, Who thinkest
thou thyself to be?

Colloquially these would be:-

ট্রিন্-র্মিন্র্নিন্মিন্নে (or অক্বনে) We know thee to be a teacher. র্টেক্স্নিন্ন্নিন্মিন্

ট্রিণ্ট্রামান্ত্র বি (or অব্নে) Who thinkest thou thyself to be?
বশ্বমান্ত্র বি

Sometimes the plain root is found in Literary Tibetan used in an Infinitive sense. Thus:—

ই ব্দা দীম দিনে মেন্স দ্বাদান র্ক বি ব্দের They supposing him to be (have been, or that he was) in the company (Luke ii. 44).

Where mandatory Imperative verbs like *Tell*, or *Order*, govern (in English) an Infinitive, the proper way of rendering the phrase in Tibetan is to turn the Infinitive into an Imperative. Thus:—

मिल सुर्गे मानुराया।

Tell him not to be late.

র্মি র্ক্ত এন প্রমা এনহা মা এই ব্রু ক্রিনা ন্তবা Order them to be here at dawn.

PARTICIPLES.

মৃত্য having only one root, the Present and Past Participles are the same and exactly like the Infinitive. Thus:—

 $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\overline{1}}$ 'A' Being; $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\overline{1}}$ 'A' Been.

The Compound Perfect Participle is 🏵 🛪 🛱 🛣 Having been.

In Colloquial the Future Participle is $\widetilde{W} \widetilde{\Gamma}_{1}^{\bullet}$ or $\widetilde{W} \widetilde{\Gamma}_{1}^{\bullet}$ About to be.

PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLE:

In the Colloquial this is \widetilde{W}_{5} , \widetilde{W}_{5} for animates, and \widetilde{W}_{5} , for inanimates, the former meaning who is, or was, or which is or was, and the latter which is, or was. It is really used as a kind of adjective.

EXAMPLES :-

E. A. मिर्भिन हो दूर हो अदिन किमा I want a servant who is honest

इति हैं से सिंदा समित्र विमारेद। सिंदा की सिंदी से सिंदी सम्बिमारेद।

This horse is a fleet one (one that is fleet).

Your knife is a blunt one.

The Past is similarly constructed. Thus:—

ত্র'ম'ন্স্মিন্র'র্'ম্ন্র'ম্ন্র'র' মান্র'র' I want the servant who was honest.

The Future may be constructed like the Present. Thus:—

েমে নার্মিনা নি ব্লি মান্ত্র জীনা I want a servant who will be honest.

Or thus:—

८.ज.चंलूचे.जू. रॅट.जू.चैर. श्रीयथ. धुचा.

Ditto.

न्मेंश।

Or :--

न्भः र्राः विनार्नाहा । Ditto.

In Literary Tibetan the Present Participle is also $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}^{-}\mathbb{W}_{7}^{-}$ or other variant of the verb To be.

EXAMPLES :-

ট্রিং বিম্পর্কির বিশ্বের ব্যামির ব্যামির I speak to you who are in this room.

रे. पश्च झेना याहे. प्रेंट. या रे. टब. या तश प्रेंटिं।

And whatsoever is (that which is) more than this is of the evil one (Matt v. 37).

चार्डः च्रान्त्रम् स्ट्रम् । नुस्यायम् स्ट्रम् स्ट्रम् स्ट्रम् स्ट्रम् स्ट्रम् स्ट्रम् स्ट्रम्

Holy, holy, holy, Lord God, Almighty, which was and which is (Rev. iv. 8).

यद्रा दक्षेप्रयद्रा

८.४. ...२.७.४ अप्रुशःयः २८.४.४ ४.४. य. २८.४. ...२.७.४ अप्रुशःयः २८.४.४ ४.४.४

I am....which is, and which was, and which is to come.

As the above examples show, the Past construction is similar, the context giving the tense.

The Literary Future for the Periphrastic Participle follows the lines of the Colloquial.

OTHER LITERARY PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

 $\widetilde{W_{7}}$ ' $\widetilde{\mathfrak{F}}$ ' $\widetilde{W_{7}}$ ' $\widetilde{\mathfrak{F}}$ E' $\widetilde{\mathfrak{F}}$ Being; as, since, when, after, while...is, are.

ଫ୍ରିସ୍ ଅନ୍ୟ At the time of being: when, while...is, are.

ॲ्रिंड In or by being; if, when...is, are.

آبر Being.

র্মির' Though, since, because . . . is, are.

 $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\overline{1}}^{\mathsf{T}}, \widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\overline{2}}^{\mathsf{T}}, \widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\overline{2}}^{\mathsf{T}$

Past.

মির'র' Having been; as, since, when, after...was, were.

র্মি চecause, since, when ... was, were; Having been

উবিমান্ত After, since, because, when ... was, were.

చ్చానా In or by having been; if, when...was, were.

ᡩᡪᢅᢋᡃᢋᢅᢡ Having been; as, since, when, after...was, were.

OTHER COLLOQUIAL PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present.

ઍઽ་ཚང་ As, since, because, etc.,...is, are.

પેંદ્રિક In or by being; if, when...is, are.

র্ম্ব্রম্ম Being. $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}$ র্মর্ব্রম্বর্দ্রম্ম \mathbf{F} \mathbf{F}

Past.

Wব্বাবার

Because, since, when, after, as...was, were.

Wব্বাবার্যা

SUPINE.

This is formed in Literature by putting the Infinitive in the Terminative case. Thus, $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ' $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ' To be. Or it may be formed by putting the Root in the same case. Thus $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ' $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ' To be.

In Colloquial the supines are $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ', and $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ',

Verbal Noun.

In Literary Tibetan $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ 'A' To be, is often seen turned into a Gerund, or Verbal Noun, by the addition of the Definite Article $\widehat{5}$ ', or $\widehat{5}$ ', or sometimes both. Thus $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ 'A' $\widehat{5}$ ', $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ', $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ 'A' $\widehat{5}$ ',

EXAMPLE:-

দার্ক নি। মার্কারের অন্থার শিলার Master, it is good for us to be here.
Literally, The being here is good
(Matt. xvii. 4).

The Colloquial Verbal Noun is simply the Infinitive with or without $\hat{\varsigma}$.

EXAMPLE:-

ন্মন্ম। এই বেনী র অন্য (নি) অন্য Lord, the being here is good for us.

§ 36. THE VERB 'TO HAVE.'

Like the Latin MIHI EST, or the Russian U MENYA YEST, There is to me, this verb in Tibetan is merely an adaptation of the Substantive Verb $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$ To be, with the subject put in the dative. But whereas, in Latin and Russian, this construction is only an alternative one, in Tibetan it is the only idiom used.

EXAMPLES :-

८.ज.ल.भ.लूर ।

८.ज स्य.स.स.र।

ब्रॅंबियाटायाक्षीकर्व व्यॉर् ।

अट.रा.टे.ज.म्_{री}ज.र्रा.श्र.लूट. ।

I have a mother.

I have not a father.

Once I had a gun.

That country will not have a king.

And so throughout the conjugation.

PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLE.

Examples:—

E-WT-1-7-WE-1

The faith which thou hast.

The faith which thou hadst.

The faith which thou wilt have.

He that hath. (Matt. xxv.

He that hath not. \ 29.)

.Even that which he hath (ib.).

§ 37. ৠব্'ম' To Be.

Like \widetilde{W}_{5} 'A' this verb is used to express direct affirmation, or, with a negative particle, direct negation, and also to connect any subject with its attribute. It cannot, however, like \widetilde{W}_{5} 'A', be used to express presence, or existence, or the idea of possession. In other words, though \widetilde{W}_{5} 'A' may be employed in every case in which \widetilde{W}_{5} 'A' is used, yet \widetilde{W}_{5} 'A' never takes the place of \widetilde{W}_{5} 'A'

It may be conjugated thus:-

८.लचार्डा.लुब

PRESENT INDICATIVE.

Affirmative.

I am good.

দিন্দ্রন্ত্রা, or occasionally ইন্ } Thou art good.

Very rarely অবি

নিন্দ্রান্ত্রি Or, occasionally:—

নিন্দ্রান্ত্রি or very rarely অব।

Literary Tibetan.

ত্রের্হে ইন্স্রির্বা

Or occasionally:—

ভূন্ন্র্র্রামন্ত্রির্বা

Thou art good.

দিন্দ্র্র্রামন্ত্রির্বা

He is good.

He is good.

The plural being the same as the singular, it is omitted. Honorific construction in Literary Tibetan:—

(Not used).

বি লাজ good.

বি লাজ বি

Colloquial Negative.

মীৰ is Literary, and both মীৰ and মাৰ Colloquial. Whether Literary or Colloquial it is best to use মাৰ।

Interrogative.

Literary.

রের্মার্ম্বর্ম।

Am I good?

ট্রিন্নর্মার্ম্বর্মা, or ব্রুদান্দ্র।

Art thou good?

মিন্নের্মার্ম্বর্ম।

Is he good?

N.B.—If and when, in the Colloquial, $\mathfrak{A}_{\mathfrak{Z}}$ is used with the 2nd person, it is generally when a question is being asked. It is hardly ever used in the Colloquial with the 3rd person, though it is not absolutely wrong so to use it.

IMPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as Present Indicative, the context generally showing what that tense is. Thus:—

In Literary Tibetan the construction is similar, but of course the *Literary* forms of the verb must be used.

Another method is similarly to rely on the context for the tense, and to use \(\tilde{\mathbb{W}}\operation^{-1}\tilde{\mathbb{W}}\o

মূর্' (Coll. মূর্) মেন্সেন্র মির্ন্মের
$$\}$$
 Formerly I was good. মূর্' (Coll. মূর্') মান্ত্রির মেন্সের $\}$,, thou wast good. মূর্' (Coll. মূর্') মান্ত্রমেন্সের $\}$,, he was good. মার্নর, or মূর্মন্র্না।

The Literary form of this construction would be $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}$: $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{3}$ for all persons, preceded by $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{3}$, or other indication of tense: and $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{3}$: would replace $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{3}$:

PERFECT AND PLUPERFECT INDICATIVE.

Same as Imperfect. Thus:—

And so forth, throughout all constructions.

FUTURE.

Same as in $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{-}$, i.e. expressed by $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}^{-}$ for all persons. The Literary construction is:—

८.इ.स्.र.चीर.र्.।	I shall be a shepherd.
ित्र हैं तेर प्रशुर दें।	Thou wilt be a shepherd.
मिंदः हैं वेंद्रः द्वयुद्धः दें।	He will be a shepherd.
८ सर मुर संभेष ते ।	I shall have been
ब्रिंदः : सरम्बुरः सः द ृषाः वृा	Thou wilt have been
मिट्टः स्यरमुद्धः याः श्वेष्वे ।	He will have been

When অঁক্সা is used as an auxiliary to other verbs, we shall find that in the Colloquial there is another Future construction, namely, "ম্ব্ৰিকা for the 1st person, and "ম্ব্ৰিকা for the 2nd and 3rd persons.

SUBJUNCTIVE OR CONDITIONAL.

Same as in \widetilde{W}_{5} - \widetilde{A}_{5} , substituting \widetilde{W}_{5} for \widetilde{W}_{5} or \widetilde{A}_{5} wherever they occur, and, in the negative forms, \widetilde{A}_{5} or \widetilde{A}_{5} for \widetilde{A}_{5} , in the first part of the sentence, but keeping the second part as it stands there. Thus:—

Present.

८'सुमा'र्से' प्येद'द'श्चेर'र्से' स्प्रेट'।

If I be rich, I shall be happy.

Past.

ट:युमा:यें प्येत्वतः क्षेत्रेत् ये प्येत्।

If I were rich, or had been rich, I would be or would have been happy.

The Literary construction is:-

If I am rich I shall be happy.

८.र्सुमा.स्.लूब.४.४.४५.४५.मी.४.५१

If I were rich I would be happy.

८:युमार्थे:अंक्षक्षक्षेत्रम्यःयःभित्।

Had I been rich I would have been happy.

POTENTIAL.

Same as in \widetilde{W}_{5} , substituting \widetilde{W}_{5} for the \widetilde{W}_{5} to which \S_{5} is annexed. Thus:—

Present.

ट'अन्। द्यां भेत्र मुन' अदः,) I can be good.

Past.

ट्यमार्चे प्रमुवायाप्रम्।

I could be good.

Perfect.

८.लची.च्.लुब.बैच.च.लूरी

I could have been good.

Or :—

অলার্মান্সর মুবার্মানা। (for all persons).

LIKELIHOOD.

The construction is the same as in $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\mathsf{7}}$ 'A' Thus:-

मिडेमा ने ने ने ने प्रत्या के प्

HORTATIVE.

Same construction as in W5'4', changing W5' into W5' Thus:-

Present.

८.लची.च्.लुब.रेमूल।

I must be good.

Past.

८.लमा.त्र.लुब.रम्बूश.वृदः।

I ought to have been good.

PURPOSIVE.

Same as in W5'U', changing W5' into W5' Thus:-

८ नर्ब सें भिन्न यदे दें का ।

In order that I may be, or might be, safe.

The Literary construction is in Aŋར་བ་ or ོམད་པ་ or ལོན་པ་ put in the genitive case and followed by རྡུ་ར།

EXAMPLE :-

IMPERATIVE.

Literary.

म्राम्प्रदेशस्यातुः (क्षेत्र)। य≅८:यूर्यमुद्रः (क्षेत्र)।

Be good.

Be a man.

Colloquially.

As stated under ইন্দ্র্

PRECATIVE.

Same construction as in \(\widetilde{\mathbb{N}} \eta', \) changing \(\widetilde{\mathbb{N}} \eta' \) into \(\widetilde{\mathbb{N}} \eta'. \) Thus:—

Let me be a lama

PERMISSIVE

Same as in ঊ্ব'ম', changing ঊ্ব' into ঊ্ব' Thus:—

દ'ব্ৰ'ঝ'ঊব'ক্ৰিল্', or ক্ৰিল্'ঝ্বি' I am allowed to be a lama.

દ'ব্ৰ'ঝ'ঊব'ক্ৰিল্'ম'ঊব', or ক্ৰিল্'ঝ্বি' | I was allowed to be a lama.

OPTATIVE.

Same as in অব্'ম', changing অব্' into অব' Thus:—

তেম্ব্রেশ্রাতিষ্ঠ (ম') ব্রিশ্য Would I were rich.

Literary.

८:युनाःर्ये:श्रेष:धर:मुर।

Would I were rich.

INFINITIVE.

মৌর্বা To be. In Literary Tibetan it is the same.

ळॅर्-यः फेब्रन्य।

To have been.

ल्राःम् (or ल्राःमृः) क्रेबःम।

To be about to be (Coll.).

लुब.सर.प्रीर.घ।

ऑटां कुं (or ऑटार्म्) श्रेष्य।

 $\left. \left. \left. \left. \left. To\;be\;about\;to\;be\;\left(\mathrm{Lit.}\right) . \right. \right. \right. \right. \right.$

EXAMPLES:-

रःशः दर्भः माः दर्भः क्रेनः सः प्रेनः सः वे व

Now, consider (see) how great this man was (to be).

In Literary Tibetan: -

न् तेन। - वेन। Ditto.

This man, if he were a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him, that she is (to be) a sinner. (Luke vii. 39.)

संस्थित स्थान स्यान स्थान स्य

I know that his commandment is (to be) life eternal.

ट्विंद्र'णेुश'रट'सु'प्येद'य'वसम्।

Or, in Literary Tibetan :—

हि**र**-कुश-स्ट-सु-धिर-यसस्य ।

Who thinkest thou that thou art, or thyself to be?

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

ॲंक्:य:

Being

Past:

FUTURE:

ळेद:य:

Been

COMPOUND PERFECT:

चित्रयाभेत्य Having been (both in Coll. and Lit.).

About to be

PERIPHRASTIC.

Both in Colloquial and Literary Tibetan, Present and Past Tenses, this is:

येवया, or येवयारे।

Who or which am, is or was.

EXAMPLES:-

स्रुनाः सप्पेदः यः दे वरः यरः दनुर।

A remnant (that which is a remnant) shall be saved. (Rom. ix. 27.)

मिर्नि रहामी प्रवास देना।

Take that which is thine own. (Matt. xxv. 25.)

ર.દ. તહે. લે. હિર. \$શ્રજ્ઞ. છે. \$ર. જ્રેર. તહે. <u> ५४:शु:५४५:व:५४:५८:। ८:शे५:</u> तर् रेशश्राष्ट्रिरणु सुनाश शु सूर्यशयः उत्राधिताया दे रहा मीहा।

Now, I, Paul, myself, who in your presence am lowly among you, but being absent am of good courage toward you. (2 Cor. x.

I speak to you that are gentiles. (Rom. xi. 13.)

בק. משבאי אישא מילי, מיבק. משבאי ८८. चाउँहा यासा श्रीम या दे या चाउँहा या इर.चर.पर्चीर ।

I will call them my people which were not my people; and her my beloved which was not beloved. (Rom. ix. 25.)

The Future Periphrastic Participle both in Colloquial and Literary Tibetan, follows the lines of めってい

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

U	THER PARTICIPAL DAPRESSIONS.	
LITERARY.	Present.	
ઐવ [.] 5ે ઐર-લૈદ-	Being; as, since, when, after, while am, is, are.	
শুৰ-মন্থ-ছুমন শুৰ-মন্থ-ছুমন	$ \begin{cases} At \text{ the time of being; when, while am, is, are.} \end{cases} $	
व्यवन्त	In or by being; If, when am, is, are.	
শুৰ'ম'	Being.	
ঐ্ব-শ্ৰীশ	Though, since, because am, is, are.	
लूब्र.सद्	Of or for being.	
2.5	Past.	
ই্ব'ই	Having been: As, since, when, after was, were.	
ঐব 'ৰ হা		
જુવ. ત્રજ્ઞ. જુવ.તજ્ઞ.	Because, since, when was, were; Having been.	
ইব-ব-ব্দ	$As, when \dots was, were.$	
धीव-व-	In or by being; If, when was, were.	
Colloquial.	Present.	
धीरायोग्ड साथाः भीरायोग्ड साथाः	At the time of being; When, while am, is, are.	
लुब्स्यद्र.र्यंश्व.)	
র্ত্তা, or ত্রীবার্ত্তা	Being; because, since, as, when am, is, are.	
र्थेन'न'	In or by being; If, when am, is, are.	
र्भेष:पदे.	Of or for being.	
ખેત્રત્ય.	Being.	

Past.

Because, since, when, after, as . . . was, were; having been.

র্মার Having been; as, since, when, after . . . was, were.

ত্মীব্যার Of or for having been.

Wর্মমের As, since, when, after . . . was, were.

মীর্'ম'র্ম' As, when . . . was, were.

র্থার In or by having been; If, when . . . was, were.

Supine.

Literary: 따라지다, and 따라다 To be.

Colloquial: অঁব্যা, and অঁব্যানু To be.

Verbal Noun.

Either 🛱 T Being, To be, or the Infinitive of the verb, which in itself includes the idea of To be. It may either be used alone, or, in the Colloquial, with $\hat{\vec{\gamma}}$, or in Literary Tibetan $\hat{\vec{\gamma}}$, or $\hat{\vec{\gamma}}$, or $\hat{\vec{\gamma}}$

EXAMPLES:-

ត្យូក'रो' ब्रिम्'भेर'य' (र्रे') सर्क्षस्य Sometimes it is not very pleasant to be a king.

 $\mathbf{x} \cdot \mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x} \cdot \mathbf{x} \cdot$

हे माद्रश र द मो द्वित र्दा मार्थिम दि कि as (to be as) his master, and the servant as his lord.

(दे) अद्मान्द्रमा

N.B.—It must always be remembered that ATT is never used substantively, but always in connection with some noun, adjective, or verb, into which its forms have to be moulded.

§ 38. THE VERB.

I.—Preliminary. The Tibetan Verb denotes only a sort of indefinite happening or state, and this not of itself, but rather by means of certain auxiliaries, including the verb To be. which alone really constitutes the verb in a Tibetan sentence. Thus:-

श्र्यःम्वायः सम्यानीशः श्र्यः मुनः गीः पर्म।

 Or बिदःयश (or शॅक् न्न न स्मान ने में भे ।

 वैक प्रेन स्मान ।

The sower is sowing the seed.

Literally, this is: By the sower, as regards the seed, a sowing is.

In fact the so-called Verb is rather a kind of Noun, modified in its significations by the verb To be, according to the mood or tense of the latter. It possesses in itself no means whereby to distinguish between the active and passive voices; the singular and plural numbers are alike in construction; and, except as regards the auxiliary To be all its forms can be used with any of the persons indiscriminately.

The changes or inflections undergone by the Tibetan Verb are effected in three ways:-

- By structural alterations in the Root;
- 2. By making use of Auxiliary Verbs;
- By resorting to divers monosyllabic Particles for the formation of Infinitives, Participles, Supines, etc.

II.—Roots.

These in Literary Tibetan are four:—1. Present; 2. Perfect; 3. Future; and 4. Imperative.

Thus:-- ·

ই, বে' To do, To make, To act.

Present Root: 55 Do, Does, Doing.

Perfect Root: 3N Have or has done.

Will do. Future Root: .5

Imperative Root:

However, every Tibetan Verb does not possess all four roots. Some only possess three. Thus:—

ম্লাম To drop, drip, trickle, leak.

Present Root: ৪ছিন্ Drop, Drops, Dropping.

Perfect Root: नाइनाहा, or इनाहा Have or has dropped.

Future Root: न्≡न Will drop.

Some possess only two roots. Thus:—

ন্ন্ত্ৰ To go, To walk.

Present and Future Root: ব্নু Goes, Will go.

Perfect and Imperative Root: SIT Have or has gone, Go.

A Colloquial Imperative is $\overline{\mathfrak{J}}^{\overline{\gamma}}$ Go.

Many possess only one root for all tenses. Thus:-

মর্থানা To see.

ম্ভারে To remember.

সুন্দ To be able.

র্থিন্য To receive, get, obtain.

ব্দীদা্ম To suit, to agree, to be satisfied.

Where, in Literary Tibetan, a verb possesses a special root for each or any of the different tenses, and for the Imperative Mood, that special root must be used for those tenses and that mood, save that when the Future construction is in AJK or Ja or Ja, the Present Root is retained instead of the Future Root. Where there is no special Future root or Imperative root, the Present root is used for the Future and Imperative. It is impossible, of course, to learn the root-forms of all the verbs, but there is no reason why those of the commoner verbs should not be memorized to some extent.

As regards the Colloquial, though it is quite allowable to use the

roots that are assigned to particular moods and tenses for those moods and tenses, yet it is said that as a matter of fact, at least in vulgar Colloquial, this is seldom or never done, and the root generally used is the Perfect root. When, however, the Present root of a verb ends in an inherent W (for instance, To look), or in an inherent Q (e.g., To look), or in an inherent Q (e.g., To bear, or bring forth), or in (e.g., To request, ask), or in (e.g., To live, feed, nourish), it is said that that Present root is generally used for the Present Indicative, the Future Indicative in TWA, or TITS, the Present Participle, Active Present Participle, Present Infinitive, Supine and Verbal Noun. If, in these verbs, the Future is formed with WT instead of TWA etc., the Perfect root (or perhaps more correctly the Future Root) must be used. Thus:—

The above idea that the Perfect Root should be used in the Colloquial probably arises from the fact that it sometimes has the same sound as the Future root. For instance, in the verb \$\square\$15\subset\sigma^*\sigm

Of course it must be remembered that the Colloquial, as such, pays no regard to spelling, but only to its own phonetics. Hence, if one

writes Tibetan, one should spell properly. Therefore, also, if one attempts to write Colloquial, as such, it must always look wrong, as regards spelling.

In Compound Honorific verbs the first retains the Present root throughout, e.g., 플립니다 지하다고 To provide.

EXAMPLE:-

ট্রিন্'
ত্রীর'দ্র'ন্স্বাদ্রান্স্রদ্রেন্ন্রন্ত্র
$$Thou\ providest\ for\ me.$$

With all other verbs the vulgar Colloquial, it is said, usually adopts the Perfect root, if any, or at least the sound of it, as above explained, for all moods and tenses. Thus, for \$\square\$1555 To send, let go, dismiss, the roots are:

Present Root: Fife Send, Sends, Sending.

Perfect Root: \(\begin{aligned} \pi \sum \text{T} \\ \pi \end{aligned} \) Have or has sent.

Future Root: \$\Pi\sum_1\

Imperative Root: $\widetilde{\mathfrak{A}}$ Γ Send.

In Literary Tibetan the Present Indicative is:—

But in the vulgar Colloquial it is :— 도작·지5도', or 뒤5도' I send, and 도작·지5도' (or 뒤5도') 취·땐5' I am sending.

In Literary Tibetan the Future Indicative is expressible in several ways with different roots. Thus:—

But in Colloquial it is :-

$$\operatorname{CSI}$$
'নাইন্'মী'মীবা

 $\operatorname{Or}: \operatorname{CSI}$ 'নাইন্' (or নার্ব্র') মূর্মি'।

There seems also to be an emphatic form in which W is affixed to the Future root, and is followed by 35 for all persons. Thus:—

I shall send; I am to send, i.e., by me a sending is to be.

So, in Literary Tibetan the Present Participle is $\overline{A}_{1}^{2} = \overline{A}_{1}^{2}$ Sending; the Active Participle $\overline{A}_{1}^{2} = \overline{A}_{1}^{2} = \overline{A}_{1}^{2}$ or $\overline{A}_{1}^{2} = \overline{A}_{1}^{2} = \overline{A}_{1}^{2}$ the who, or It that, sends; the Terminative Infinitive $\overline{A}_{1}^{2} = \overline{A}_{1}^{2} = \overline$

III .- AUXILIARY VERBS.

These are $\widetilde{\mathcal{W}}_{\overline{1}}, \widetilde{\mathcal{W}}_{\overline{1}}, \widetilde{\mathcal$

and AJETT To become, To happen, To take place, To occur; AZTT To be finished, completed, terminated; AJTT To be made ready, finished, accomplished; AJTT To be ended, concluded, exhausted; AJTT and AJTT To be able; AJTT To go, but used idiomatically; AJTT and AJTT To be necessary, or expedient or expressive of the idea of obligation or duty; AFTT To allow, suffer, permit; AJTT To be allowed or permitted; JTTT make, do, act, perform; AJTTT and AFTT elegant and respectful forms of JTTT; WTTT or AFTT To be possible, probable, likely, etc., etc.

IV.—AUXILIARY PARTICLES.

(1)— $\hat{\eta}$, $\hat{\eta}$, $\hat{\eta}$, $\hat{\psi}$, $\hat{\eta}$ annexed to the Verbal Root according to rule, with reference to the final letter of the root (see § 25, iv). Used to connect the root with $\hat{\psi}$, $\hat{\psi}$, $\hat{\eta}$, $\hat{\eta}$, $\hat{\eta}$ or $\hat{\eta}$ they form a periphrastical Present Tense. For example, in the Colloquial, which loosely uses the sound of the Perfect Root—

555751 I send.

But:-

Sometimes, in the vulgar Colloquial, they are annexed to the roots of adjectives, taking the place of the adjectival particle $\overline{\lambda_i}$, λ_i , or $\overline{\lambda_i}$. Thus:—

યમાં મુંદ્રાનું મેર્ડ instead of યમાં માં ફુંગર્સે રેંગ્રેન્ડ The road is rough. દ્યું મુખ્યમાં મેરેન્ડ instead of દ્યું મુખ્યમાં સેંગ્રેન્ડ The child is good.

It is better, however, to use the adjective in full, and not to employ the construction in \mathfrak{H} , \mathfrak{H} etc.

These Particles are sometimes used at the end of a sentence in the sense of a finite verb, and more particularly in the 1st Person Future.

EXAMPLES:-

दश्यसुमानी | I shall put in.

दशःर्भिशःनुरुःणुः, or मुःष्णे। I shall help.

(2)— \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} , \mathbb{N} . These are annexed to the root as Gerunds, and signify By (doing something), or Because, Since, etc., but more usually antithetically as But, Though.

EXAMPLES:-

When used antithetically a pleonastic द्वाप्य sometimes follows—:

When annexed to the root of an adjective it includes the verb To

be. Thus:—

र्से न्वान्त्र न्वान्त्र = स्मिन्नम् Since, Because, or Though (she was, or is) of fine stature.

(3)— भैंद, भैंद, and भैंद। Annexed to the root. These are Literary forms, and denote the Participle Present.

EXAMPLES:-

मिंदः र्ह्मेन प्रसादिन स्थान का his way praying.

Used to connect the root with $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}, \widetilde{\mathsf{W}}, \widetilde{\mathsf{W}},$

Examples:--

मिट्स्यु त्येष गुप्त प्रमा

Lo, I come (am coming). (Heb x.7.)

He is singing.

When connecting the root with 5^{L} Together with, they are often used gerundially.

EXAMPLES:-

मर्हिट मीव दट ।

In, when, or while sending.

ध्रां त्रेन मीन रूप

In, etc., singing.

35.54221

In, etc., doing.

दर्ने भेदरा

In, etc., going.

Thus:-

In the Colloquial this may be rendered:-

(4).— $\hat{\mathbf{5}}$ after final $\mathbf{5}$

5 after final 4, 5, A, N

মূ after final না, দা, না, না and all vowels.

These are a sort of Continuative Particles or Suspensives, and may be annexed to all Present and Perfect roots, but according to rule, with reference to the final letter of the root. Annexed to Present roots they form a Present Participle, or Gerund, and, annexed to Perfect roots, a Past Participle, or Gerund. Thus, they may be rendered.... ing, or... ing been, or...ing...ed, or As, when, after, etc. They are Literary rather than Colloquial, though not altogether absent from the latter, and are largely met with in those subordinate clauses a longer or shorter string of which generally goes to the construction of a Tibetan sentence.

EXAMPLES:—

ये त्यां दे त्या के स्टार्स स

Pilate and Herod were formerly (formerly having been) at enmity with each other. (Luke (xxiii, 12.)

And seeing the multitudes he, etc. (Matt. v. 1.)

देशका समूह तु. पंचीमा देशहा हो। इ. यहा समूह तु. पंचीमा देशहा हो।

And when even was come his disciples went (having gone) down to the sea, etc. (John vi. 16.)

(5)— 3\(\mathbb{T}\); after final \(\mathbb{T}\), \(\mathbb{T}

This Suspensive, which is Literary rather than Colloquial, is annexed to the Root, and expresses in one or other of its forms the Present Participle, but sometimes also the Past Participle. It is also sometimes used instead of the conjunction And. Lastly, it often expresses a causal relationship. It is generally met with at the end of minor interpolations within subordinate clauses.

EXAMPLES:-

মন্ত্রীনামার্মার বর্লা বিদ্যান ব্যান মূর্মার (By) Marching quickly the army arrived.

<u> देशकाली मुल्ल</u>ेट हिरादा सुवार्की गुनादु क् वटा तहमाशाकीट पर्वेट दे। वेर्ने भेर डिट क्रुट भेर।

(Matt. ix. 35.) Being afraid and calling out.

And Jesus went (having gone) about all the cities and villages.

Light not being, air is not; or Light is not and air is not; or Light and air not being; Without light or air. (Das.)

अयः बिदः मारे दः दः दे में न

Lying down, to go to sleep; To lie down and go to sleep.

ৰুম'মামৰ' দ্ৰীম' (perfect of বৃত্তীই'ম') ₹.1

The heavens having parted, or rent asunder. (Mark i. 10.)

(6)— 디자 and 기자 !

These are merely the particles \mathbf{A}' and \mathbf{A}' of the Infinitive, or simple Participle, put in the Instrumental or Modal case. they are equivalent to $\hat{\xi}$, $\hat{\xi}$, and $\hat{\xi}$ and the next noted Suspensive They are often used as a variant of these, when the latter have already occurred in the same sentence. This is merely a matter of taste, to avoid repetition. Primarily they mean Because, Since, Seeing that, etc., but they also carry the sense of When, and of the Participle, both Present and Past. Both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan make use of them:-

EXAMPLES:-

C.イビュッタ・ロがめ、これが一

नेव.रे.रयात.च.लुब.राश्रा

८.र्भुय.राश.भ.पहचाश.र्भुम।

रेर शे खेंब मी श्रुमा खें कर पर वर वर मी ব5ব (perfect of বইবমানা) মুপ্তমা বশ'র্জই'রহা।

When I looked; i.e., I having looked.

As, since, because it is very difficult; or It being very difficult.

Since it is I, or It being I, or Itis I, be not afraid. (Matt. xiv.

Then Simon's mother-in-law having been seized by a fever-illness and having lain down. (Mark i. 30.)

্ৰাট্ট্ৰ্ৰ্ন্ত্ৰ্যা দিন্দ্ৰিক্ষান্ত্ৰন Now, since (or because) ye say, we see. (John ix. 41).

EXAMPLES:-

मिंद्र-मीश-दे-दमात्म। दत्ते-क्ष-दिन्दः मदः यः सः श्रु-प्रोते । विश्व-माश्च-द्व-द्वशः। द्वि-त्री-स्वा-त्वा-त्वः। दत्ते-क्ष-द्वशः। द्वि-त्री-स्वा-त्वः।

He to them, my mother and my brother who is? Thus having said. (Matt. xii. 48, and elsewhere).

When your work is finished you may go home.

च्चित्र। नित्राह्म ।

After eating (having eaten) chhoti hāzirī you must set out.

८.ज्.चार्वेद्यःचार्वेदःल्येदःवस्य। स्वदःलःटःहें हे म्ल्रीटःलःल्येदःवस्य।

I have been (having been) young.

I was formerly (having formerly been) in Darjeeling.

Annexed thus to the Verbal Root, and followed by $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{2}}$ or $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{2}}$, it indicates either the Pluperfect (active), or the Perfect (passive). Thus:—

द्याः विश्वः विश्व The tiger had eaten the deer.

The deer has been eaten.

I had gone home.

I had been asked.

र्वेनाःश्चेतःबटःबट्टेरेडेरःवेशःबरायर्गा

In the roll-book it is (has been) written of me. (Heb. x. 7).

(8)—AN. This particle has (perhaps) sometimes a Present but more often a Past signification, and is always found attached to the simple Participle in \mathfrak{I} or \mathfrak{I} . It means From; or $When \ldots ed$;

or Being...ed; or Having been; or As or While, followed by a Past tense; or As or While, followed by a Present Participle (in which case the root of the verb is often repeated, the particle \mathfrak{I} or \mathfrak{I} coming next, and then the $\mathfrak{I} \mathfrak{I}$; or When on the point of; When about to; When going to; Being about to, or on the point of, when used with $\mathfrak{I} \mathfrak{I}$ or $\mathfrak{I} \mathfrak{I}$ or $\mathfrak{I} \mathfrak{I} \mathfrak{I}$

EXAMPLES :-

रे.र्नामीश्रामेट्रायश। ५.र्नामीश्रामेट्रायश।

रे'व्य'मिंट'यर'येवय्यायायय।

दुमान्द्रात्त्रेम् स्थाः स्थाः यहान्याः स्थाः व्याप्तः । नुः वसः चिः स्वाः वसः स्थाः द्वेः विसः यन्नाः

हेंब्रायायहा। केंब्रायायहा

चिट्रमीस-५-३८-चमाद-माश्चरस-दात्ससा

रे.रमार्शेट.च.पर्श।

ॐ.चोर्थश.र्थश्चश.वीट.श्र्ट.घ.जश।

रेते कें से मार्ड्स बिट या भेर राजस।

অম: বৃ: বৃনা: নীরা: ছ্রী: ধর ই ব্র: মা: বৃদ: ন: মর ।

ट्रेन्ट्रेश शु. हे. नाइश इसश मुं व्हा शु. हे. नाहेश तमा ट्रे . बुनाश इस स्था मुं . ब्हा है. द्रेन्ट्रेश साम है. बुनाश इसश मुं . ब्हा है. When they continued asking, i.e., again and again asked, him. (John viii. 7).

Thereupon as he passed by. (John ix. 1).

And he, having gone, and having associated with a householder of that country, after having settled. (Luke xv. 15).

Then Jesus, having begun again to teach by the seaside. (Mark iv. 1).

And while he yet spake. (Matt. xxvi. 47).

When they were going (As they went). (Matt. xxviii, 11).

And the disciples as they went. (Mark ii. 23).

There shall two men be in the field, i.e. while being. (Matt. xxiv. 40).

And they stoned Stephen; or As or while they stoned, or were stoning Stephen. (Acts vii. 59).

After that, two of his disciples, having set out on a journey, as they were going to a country. (Mark xvi. 12).

थर:रे:द्वाभक्षाताः श्रॅट:श्रॅट:रातशा

लटा दें दिया है ' खेर ' या देश' हो दे खेट ' या हैया' जन्म हैया में शर्दे ' या देश' साथश ।

বৃত্ত ক্র' বে' ধ্রেম' ব' ক্রম' নার্ক্ত ক্র' নার্ক্ত ব' দ্রাম' ক্রম' ক্রম' ব' ক্রম' ব' ক্রম' নার্ক্ত ব' নার্ক্ত ম'ম্মম' (Present root) ব'মেম।

यस्र-तर-मो≡श-तःजश। यस्र-तर-मो≡श-तःजश। And as they went on their way. (Acts viii, 36).

And while they, thus conversing, questioned each other. (Acts xxiv. 15).

And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the Lord's disciples. (Acts ix. I).

And when Paul was now about to open his mouth. (Acts xviii. 14).

And should have been killed, i.e., being about to be, or on the point of being killed. (Acts xxiii. 27).

(9)—5. This is expressive of condition, hypothesis, contingency and even doubt, and may be rendered by If, When, On, Since, As, Should, Had, Were, etc. It is generally added to the Root, but sometimes (though not often) to the Infinitive, and is much used at the end of verbal phrases both in the Colloquial and in the written language. Sometimes the phrase which it concludes is introduced by the expression $\pi \pi$ or $\pi \pi$, but the subjunctive idea is in no way affected even if this expression be omitted.

Examples of its use with the Root are given under $\widetilde{\mathcal{W}}_{5}$ '\mathfrak{\mathfrak{\mathfrak{W}}}_{5}'\mathfrak{\mathfrak{W}}_{5}'\mathfrak{\

5 is also used in Literary Tibetan, adversatively, to express Though, Although. Thus:—

Although he was formerly a transgressor. (Das.)

It also expresses the idea of Reason for, or Causality. Thus:—

ATIMATICAL Since this existed, that arose.

(Das.)

अः व्यन्तः विद्याः । दः व्यन्तः विद्याः विद्याः । Since fire existed, smoke arose. (Das.)

(On) seeing me the thief fled.

Used with 55% it expresses When, or If and when. Thus:—

वस्राट त्र्री व।

If and when, or when, I go. (Das.)

ब्धार्नुसायात्वनः व।

If and when, or when the time comes, i.e., it comes down to the time. (Das.)

(10)—A. Annexed to the Participle, this Suspensive may mean To, At, In; With respect, regard, or reference to; Concerning; Relative to; In consequence of.

EXAMPLES:-

चर्स्रेर्-रा.ज.रचिर.च।

To rejoice in killing. (Jäschke.)

कृषायातात्र्रम्याय।

To shrink from, or be afraid of (i.e., with respect to) sinning. (Das.)

Annexed to the Root, it may be used for the Present Participle in a minor phrase, much like 35 and its variants. Thus:—

पर्मा दिंद हें राष्ट्रें त्या रहा मी प्रमुह्स Denying himself and taking up his cross.

It is also often used like $\hat{5}$, $\hat{5}$, $\hat{5}$, but annexed to the Participle, and meaning As.

EXAMPLES:-

झ देव विमार्भिन याय।

As there is (was) an idol shrine.
(Das.)

मुक्षः द्वाः केषः देः निष्यः चै**रः पृ**ष्यः चै**रः पृः** दक्तः नः

As the king goes there daily to bathe.

८६मा देव मी वट व के दिंद मा

As it does not occur in the world. (Jäschke.)

Annexed to the Root, it is used adversatively for Though, Although.

EXAMPLE :-

Though looking, he did not see.

Annexed to the Repeated Root, it expresses While, Whilst.

EXAMPLE:-

प्रान्देश अन्।

Whilst I am reading this book note down what I say.

When annexed to adjectives, \mathfrak{A}' includes the idea of the verb $To\ be$, being indeed an abbreviation of $\mathfrak{A}\mathfrak{A}'\mathfrak{A}''\mathfrak{A}''$ Being, and seems to have the force of And, or But, according to circumstances.

EXAMPLES :-

প্রধান্থ, প্রধান্ত হার বিশেষ বিশেষ প্রধান। স্থান নির্মান্ত হার বিশেষ প্রধান।

Hair and beard being yellow and long. (Das.)

Being ugly as to his body and of small stature and (or but) having a fine voice. (Das.)

भ्राक्ष्यात्राचीयः विद्यास्य स्वाप्ताः स्रोहेकः य ।

Being ugly and short. (Jäschke.)

Being of good figure, nice to look at, and pretty.

In double Imperative or Precative expressions, \mathbb{A} has the force of the Present Participle, or of And, and is annexed to the root of the first verb.

EXAMPLES:

र्जुचा ता झूँश क्षेचा।

Come and see (coming, see).

५'खॅट'अ'र्कुर'र्ज्जा। ५'ख'अटश'अ'र्ज्जा।

Now, rise and come hither (rising, come hither).

श्रॅट.ज.र्जूश.चुना।

Go and look (going, look).

क्रीचा.ज.र्जुंश।

In sentences like the following, where our Supine means In order to, or For the purpose of, \square , annexed to the verbal Root, is used Supinally both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial.

EXAMPLES:-

(11)—道。

EXAMPLES :— ८ दि. मुं थित । वि. मुं स्मृ सः देत् ।

 $I \ shall \ come$; $I \ am \ about \ to \ come$.

He will not speak; He is not about to speak.

It is also used in older Literary Tibetan to express necessity, obligation, expediency.

Examples:-

८.पूर्ट.ची.की.की.चे.ची. च्रिट.चीश.दे.जा.दे.ट.ची.शु.शु. ८.जा.जे.ची.की.शु.र.ची.जूरी १

Am I to come? Must I come?

He ought not to beat the horse.

I have many things to write.

In the Colloquial \$\overline{\pi}\$, annexed to the verbal Root, is extensively used for the Infinitive.

EXAMPLES:-

प्टरमञ्जेन सम्बन्धः स्टर्नि । प्टरमञ्जेन सम्बन्धः स्टर्नि । I do not wish to go there.

How far have we to walk to reach home?

द्धः त्रायः स्कृ से प्रेतः । स्राप्तः स्वरं स्व

What have you to say?

There is nothing at all to say.

Be pleased to rise.

Is there any sport (game) to be got here?

I do not wish to be there.

In the Colloquial this particle, with or without the $\mathfrak{R}_{\mathfrak{I}}^{\mathfrak{S}}$, is also extensively used, annexed to the Verbal Root, to express what correspond to our Verbal Nouns in ing, i.e. the Latin Gerund.

EXAMPLES:-

र्केशः भूतः सूर्येगः थः (२२ः) नः उटः सर्वोः २ वेर्केशः से रेत्।

It is very confusing to read the Literary language: The reading of the Literary language, etc.

नुस्रायत्वनुष्यः (८५ः) नःख्टःदब्स्यः देर्।

It is very wrong to tell lies: The telling lies, etc.

<u>च</u>्च न मुक्ते स स्मित्र न त्र ह्रेंट प्यते 'तुका ने**न।**

The second month (March) is the time for selling (of selling) shares.

য় । য়ৼ : য় । য়ৢৼ । য়ৢৼ । য়য়ৼ : য় : ড়ৼ : য় ৼ देवीं য় : ড়য় : ঢ়ৢৼ । য়য়ৼ : য় : ড়ৼ ।

Few people need learn this extraordinary language; There is no meaning of many people having to learn this, etc.

(13)—55

Both in Literary Tibetan and in the Colloquial this enclitic, used after the Infinitive or Participle in \mathfrak{A} or \mathfrak{A} , may be rendered As, When (carrying a Past signification), and it also has the force of the Past Participle.

EXAMPLES:-

लट्याप्र.रे.वे.च.२.मुर.स.रटा

And the Word became (having become) flesh. (John i. 14).

સ. સર. ખે. જોખ. મું. વૈર્ય સુર્ય. જુનો. જે. ખુશે. ખ

व्याक्षर:चग्रेय:भूर:भग्राक्षर:स:रूट:।

সূর্ত্র-বেম-বেশ্রিম-রূ। সূর্ত্র-বেম-জীপ-বিশ-সামিম-জীপ-বা-স্বান

ने दश है श यने ' है श या वे । । वे प्रनाय दिए ।

र्विक्षिः र्वटः देवे स्टायः यात्रः स्त्रीयसः याद्दाः । याद्रायोग्नी स्वार्थसः स्त्रीयः यादाः ।

ने बुक्य मा<mark>लु</mark> मात्य कटा का ने कंटर ना है. देवा केवर ने प्रोंकियन नटा । There cometh a woman of Samaria (a woman of Samaria having come) to draw water. (John iv. 7).

In the beginning was the Word (the Word having been). (John i. 1).

Ye shall see the heavens opened, and, etc. (The heavens having opened, ye shall see, etc.). (John i. 51).

Then, in the calculator's computations the year omens having been harmonious.

When he has arrived (He having arrived) at the house of the family.

When about a year had elapsed.

When at last the wedding was over.

As the big bell was tolled.

In Literary Tibetan, especially in Western Tibet, 5% is often used gerundially with the Present Participle in 5%, 5%, etc., and means In, When, While, etc.

EXAMPLE :--

म्नु 'प्रेन' मुन्द 'प्राप्त 'प्राप्त

In Literary Tibetan, and especially of late in the Colloquial, it is used as a familiar form of the Imperative, and implies advice, exhortation and entreaty.

EXAMPLES:

त्रॅं न'च्चिंर'गुैं प्रायमार्जेश (ज्वेमा) तृहः। Oh, do eat your food.

चिंर्र'रहामी'र्ध्यमार्जेश (ज्वेमा) तृहः। Do learn your lesson.

মু after ম

ম' after anything.

These particles, as Verbal Auxiliaries, are extensively used in Literary Tibetan to express the Infinitive Future and the Supine. They are seldom, if at all, used in the Colloquial, save by those who affect Literary forms.

EXAMPLES:-

ल्ह्मासर,जेब्स्ट्री शु.च्चीषाय रे.ज.टश.श्रॅ्चा.ची.चीटालश.च.?.

र्वे क्षितार्केट्र नु तह मायर त्युर रे । हिं क्षेत्र व रे क्ष

द्रमशःमोर्ट्माः यरः द्रिशः यः श्रः प्रेव । ्रोमाः श्चेतः हे . ५ होत् . द्वेषा . त्रम

हिंदिः क्ष्यं दे त्र वित्त हिनासः यः स्रेदः यदः हिदः द्राम्यक्ष्यः दुः यदुः नायदः हिंदः

द्वाण्टाद्वे म्यायसायस्य म्यायस्य । त्वाण्टाद्वे म्यायसायस्य म्यायस्य । To him that overcometh will I give TO EAT of the tree of life. (Rev. ii. 7).

To him that overcometh will I grant to SIT with me in my throne. (Rev. iii. 21).

Who is worthy to open (opening) the book and to loose the seals thereof? (Rev. v. 2).

And to them it was given that they should not kill them (not TO KILL them) but that they should be tormented (but TO BE TORMENT- ED) five months. (Rev. ix. 5).

See that he BE with you without fear. (1 Cor. xvi. 10).

But to SIT on my right hand or on my left hand is not mine to give. (Mark x. 40). WC নার্ক নি নাইনি মান্টা মানার্ক মান্ত্রমান্ত্র And the Lord's servant being apt
TO TEACH. (2 Tim. ii. 24).

ষূ'র্ন্ন' ব্র' মধ্য ট্রিন্ন' মান্দ্রির্ন্ন' মান্দ্রির্ন্ন' The Lama will allow you to offer prayers to-morrow in the monastery.

रेंद्रमानीश मिंद्र अपिस हैमाद्रुप स्प्रिं। They have allowed him to build the house:

The last of these particles, namely A, is not much used in this connection in Literary Tibetan. It may, however, be so used instead of any of the others.

EXAMPLE :--

ट.के.ज.पंगू त्

I go to see.

(15)—স্থিক and স্থিক কুঁ. Annexed to verbal Roots, স্থিক has, in Literary Tibetan, the force of the Present Participle, and, with স্ব added, may be used as an adjective; while স্থিক কুঁ serves as a Gerund, meaning As, While, or Whilst, and also Though, and Because, or Since, according to circumstances.

Examples:-

ट.पर्में.चर्चर.भक्षश

I am going. (Elegant form).

प्राप्त क्रमास प्रति प्राप्त स्था स्था प्रति । He glanced at me with a loving look.

र्ने.धी.धटश.श्रा भ्याभाष्यस्थानीश्वरम्थित्यः तालातहमा चल्यः As the Lamas entered the monastery (while entering the monastery) they chanted hymns.

म्यः स्ट्राटः स्ट्रीः स्ट्राटः स्ट्रीहरः स्ट्र

Though he had tea he did not drink.

কং নিহি ' নী ' মূর ' নু ' অবি ' ন্ ন্ নু ' Since the beer was in front of him he drank.

(16)—3**年**.

This is a Colloquial Suspensive. Added to the verbal Root, it means As, Since, Because, and implies either Present or Past.

EXAMPLES:-

These also are much used Colloquially. Annexed to the verbal Root 5% acts as a Gerund, meaning As, When, While, At the time of, etc.

EXAMPLES:-

র্ভিন্'ট্রাম'ন্রি'ন্ট্রম'ন'র ভ্রিম'ম' (ব') বি' When writing take care what you say.

मिं चेंत् तुशाम र्केना क्षेत्रा चुश्चा या नेत्।

As he went off, he smiled.

5 Mar has the same meaning, but is annexed to the simple. Infinitive, or Participal form of the verb, put into the genitive case.

EXAMPLES:-

मिंदिबेंद्र सदै पुंडा सामिकें मार्केम केंग मुझारा As he went off, he smiled.

A Literary equivalent of 5 NA is ENIV.—Moods and Tenses.

A .- Infinitive Mood.

The Infinitive, both in Literature and in the Colloquial, is the simple form of the verb as given in dictionaries, i.e. the Root, with \mathfrak{A}^* or \mathfrak{A}^*

annexed, according to the rule regarding the final letter of the root. It is the same as the Participial form, and also as the form of the verb regarded as a substantive. Thus 353 may mean $To\ do$, or Doing, or A, or the, doing.

Each root can be regarded as the basis of a special Infinitive. Thus:—

Present:	बॉर् <u>ट</u> -च	To send.
Perfect :	קקביקי	
	<u> </u>	To have sent.
	ব5८:ব:শুৰ্:ঘ:	
	न5८:ॲ५:यः	·
Future :	म् ५८.च.	To be about to send, or To be sent.
	मान्द्रम् प्येष्ट्रसः	
	नान्द्रः मूँ। ॲन्या	
	मोर्टेट कुं फेर्य स	

In Tibetan the latter of two related English verbs takes precedence of the other, and may be put in the Infinitive, or in the Genitive form of the Infinitive. Thus:—

$$\Gamma$$
 प्रायम् प्रायम्यम् प्रायम् प्रायम् प्रायम् प्रायम् प्रायम् प्रायम् प्रायम् प्राय

At the same time the Colloquial construction by which si is added to the verbal Root has largely taken the place of the Infinitive.

Thus:—

In conversation, however, it is quite allowable and common to omit the $\mbox{$

ट.र्जना.क्.रेट.क्री.चीश्व.पट्टी.क्रु.पट्टी।

I wish to go home.

I am unwilling to write with ink and pen.

This is particularly the case where the governing verb is সুবামা To be able, ক্রামা To be allowed, স্ট্রামা To allow, স্মামা To be necessary; must. ought, and the like.

EXAMPLES:-

दश मेत्रै श्रेद था भेर् मदश संदि शे I cannot see the snow on the hill.

प्रदेश मिर भेना परेते बर भा श भा Are we allowed to smoke in this room?

८.थू.५.धूर.चड्या।

Let us go away.

८शःहुँद्र.ज.५३ँद्र.५**६**म।

I allow you to depart.

मार्शेर पदे दें राया अनुमें हा

In order to live it is necessary to eat.

हिर्म्यस्य म्यू त्यार में निर्मेश।

You must go to school.

हिंदि गुर्मिश्यामु दे दूष्ट से द्वीस

You ought not to beat that child.

Where the governing verb is one of Knowing, Saying, Hearing, Thinking, or the like, the governed verb, in sentences like the following, is put in the Infinitive, or else the verbal Root, with \mathfrak{F} annexed, is used.

EXAMPLES:—

हिंदित्रे दिः स्त्रे दिः स्त्रा स्त्रा स्त्रे स

I did not know that you were here (you to be here).

क्षु-विश्व। क्षु-विश्व। (or विज्ञीक्षुः) दशः

I do not know where you are going (you to be going).

লু-ফুৰ: (or লু**ৰ:**ফু.) ব**ব৴।** লু-ফুৰ: ফুৰ: ধাংল: ফুৰ: রূম:ফু

History relates that Buddha was (Buddha to have been) at first a king.

I heard you were going (you to be going) to Darjeeling.

हिंद्र-हें है ब्रीट अर्चेन या धेन या दश में या धेन

I heard you had left (you to have left) for Darjeeling.

८अ:Bुँर:गुँश:इ:कुँश:य:पोद:य:यशमश।

I thought you had bought (to have bought) the horse.

मि केंश ८ ता त्यस मा दे च केंग वं भेराय संवेद रुखा

When they saw that the work had been entrusted to me (the work to have been entrusted to me).

The same construction is also used in connection with phrases like It were better that, It is evident that.

मुं ते क्षे ते क्षां क्षेत्र के क

It were better that a large stone were bound on his neck and he were (he to be) cast into the sea. (Mark ix. 42).

हश्राणुः सेतृ । सक्रमामीः श्रुवः सूरः स्तरः देः द्वार्यः प्येवः यः याप्यः विस्रसः णुः श्लेः वसः श्लाः स्यारः प्रिवः

It is evident that no one is justified by the law in God's sight. (Gal. iii. 11).

In phrases containing That, So that, In order that, With the object of, To the end that, For the purpose of, the verb is put in the genitive case of the Infinitive, and is followed by 55.74 in the Colloquial, and by \$\frac{3}{5}\tau^2\$ or \$\frac{3}{5}\tau^2\$ in Literary Tibetan.

EXAMPLES :-

In order that I may, or might, be here.

সিন্দ্রের্মেরের্ম্মরের্মরের্ম্মরের্ম্মরের্ম্মরের্ম্মরের

Where, in English, a mandatory Imperative governs a verb in the Infinitive, e.g. Order him to come, Tell him not to go, the Tibetan construction puts the governed verb also in the Imperative, not the Infinitive, mood.

EXAMPLES :-

নিমি নিমা (উদা) মন।

Tell him, come (to come).

নিমা শ্বেদী (উদা) নাম্বান্য।

Order him, do not go (not to go).

নাম্বান্য নীমা খ্রমা দুলেন্ত্রি স্থ্রানামা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

বিশ্বা

তিন্তা

নাম্বান্য নামা

বিশ্বা

তিন্তা

নাম্বান্য নামা

বিশ্বা

তিন্তা

নামা

Whenever it is possible to turn a verb into a Verbal Noun, or what is called in Latin a Gerund; it should be done.

EXAMPLES:-

শ্নিশান্থাইন্ম (এই) মেমাইটি It is better to be in Darjeeling than in Calcutta, i.e. the being in Darjeeling is better than the staying in Calcutta.

or অব্দ্রা স্পান্থাইব।

েবল্পের্কিন (বিং) মানীশান্ধর। For to me to live is Christ and to die is gain. (Philipp. i. 21).

B.—The Supine.

The genius of the Tibetan language is so different from that of other languages, both Eastern and Western, ancient or modern, that to

speak of Supines, Gerunds, and the like, in connection with it, is at least to strain the limits of analogy, if not to indulge in the illegitimate. But, so long as this is remembered, the Supine of Literary Tibetan may be said to be susceptible of several constructions. First, it may appear in the shape of the Infinitive put in the Terminative case with \mathfrak{T} .

Examples:--

श्रीशः श्रीम्। श्रीशः ग्रीमः क्रोनीं सरः कुशः सः देः कः में। सरः

He that is able to receive (hear) it let him receive (hear) it. (Matt. xix. 12).

श्रीश्रीश्रीयादीयम्

I ask to be forgiven this wrong. (2 Cor. xii. 13).

हिंदिकु मान्नियहूद प्रतिकास दिकास. समाकाक्षी

Worthy art thou to receive glory. (Rev. iv. 11).

टश.४ चै.घर.मो≡श.च.जश।

I was about to write. (Rev. x. 4).

द्यों देश हैन। इंदर्जन।

Forget not to show love unto (bestow love on) strangers. (Heb. xiii. 2).

Secondly, it may take the form of the Verbal Root, with 5, 5, 5, 5, or, less frequently, A, annexed.

EXAMPLES :-

द्रशासी हैमाख्याद्वस्य प्रेति हैं। द्रायाणीय। हैमाख्याद्वस्य प्रेति हैं।

I came not to call the righteous but sinners. (Mark ii. 17).

८२.रमामी अर्मा अर्मा अत्वा निम् हे हें दिया

That he should lay his hands on their heads and pray. (Matt. xix. 13).

सर.**प्रचीर.स् ।** दश.च्रिट.पा.श्रुंची.च्री.पुट.पश.च.२.प्रहेची. I will give him to eat of the tree of life.

वुस्रायाद्भीत्मासाङ्ग्रीत्म । विद्याने विद्यासाङ्ग्रीत्म । This bottle is (likely) to crack.

He has gone to buy a horse.

Thirdly, it may appear as the Infinitive, put in the genitive case and followed by 35 or 355

EXAMPLES :-

ल.केब.तापु.जीर.शपु.श्राज्ञाचे.बश.पुटश.श्रा ड्रा.ज्रीचाश.ग्री.चील.श्रा.श्रा.ज्रा.श्राची.पूची.ता.

The Queen of the South came from the ends of the Earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon. (Luke xi. 31).

म्रिट्मील ब्रिट्मील यह हीर टी हुर हु।

He came forth conquering and to conquer. (Rev. vi. 2).

The Colloquial has no Infinitive in the Terminative case with $\overline{\Sigma}$. That is only found in Literary Tibetan. In the Colloquial, therefore, the Supine never appears in that form. It expresses itself either through the Infinitive alone, or through the Infinitive put in the genitive case and followed by $\overline{\Sigma}$ (and generally means "In order to," or "For the purpose of"), or through the particles $\overline{\Sigma}$ (when necessity or obligation is implied), or Ξ (object or purpose) annexed to Verbal Roots.

EXAMPLES:-

चैट.चड्राच.पीच.पीचा.ट्रे.झूँचा.चाडीचशा.शूटः।

A carpenter has come to mend the chair.

८.च्रिस्रश्च.चर.ज.चुंच.चेंच्यंचे.चुंच. ८.च्रिस्रश्च.चर.ज.चंच्यंचे.चुंच.

I am on my way (going) to Court, to see the trial.

ম'ন্ম'র বি নি নি ক্রি'র বি নি Come with me to hear the music.

र मान्त्री मान्त्र सामा सर्वेद सामुन्य । went to Calcutta to sell my house.

रें हे न्री भारते में जु रामा केट सु का किंदा | How far is it (to go) to Darjeeling.

C .-- The Verbal Noun.

What this is may be seen in the sentence, For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. Here, the Infinitives, To live, and To die, may be turned into Nouns, The living, and The dying.

In Literary Tibetan the Verbal Noun appears either in the guise of the Infinitive (which, as already explained, is formally the same as the Noun and the Participle) or in the guise of the Infinitive followed by the Definite Article $\frac{2}{3}$. Thus, in Literary Tibetan, either of the following contractions is right:—

दःस्टायात्रर्केतायादायाः विगायोग । तकेः यःयदःसन्यते र्हेन्योन्ने । Or:—

८:२८:य:५र्डे.च.वे.स.चे.प्र.ले.। ५७.च. अ८:यर:यप्रे.ट्रेंस.ले.प्र.ले.। For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. (Philip. i. 21).

So also:-

यब्द से बुद्दा (के) येन्स यास भेत्र । It is not

It is not expedient to marry. (Matt. xix. 10).

अ. यैचा.त्. (कृ.) २.५५ हु। अ. यैचा.त्.(कृ.) २.५५ हु।

It is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven. (Matt. xix. 23).

র্ম্বিরা ইব্রার্ম্বর্থনির (বি) Master, it is good for us to be here. (Luke ix. 33).

Colloquially the Verbal Noun may be expressed either through the Infinitive followed by $\Im \overline{\Im}$, or $\Im \overline{\Im}$, or through the Verbal Root followed by $\Im \overline{\Im}$, or $\Im \overline{\Im}$, with or without $\Im \overline{\Im}$

EXAMPLES :-

ব্রীমানই মামান্ত্রা W' ইমানান্ত্রা ক্রিটা The hitting, i.e. To hit a man when he is down, is cowardly.

৭ই ব্র অর্থ ন্থ নেই থেকা ইম অর্থ নেই It is better to be here than there;

The being here is better, etc.

অন্যানা ইবৃ।

And or makes no difference.

EXAMPLES:—

A \(\bar{3} \) A \(\hat{4} \) A

It is pleasant to walk here.

In fact, the Verbal Noun, just like any other noun, is subject to declension.

Examples:—

स्या हिंद्रह्म साम्यास्य स्थान्य स्था

Let every man be swift to hear. slow to speak. slow to wrath. (Every man should be swift as regards hearing, slow as regards speaking, slow as regards being angry). (James i. 19).

The Verbal Noun may be formed out of any of the Infinitives. Present, Past, or Future.

D.—Participles.

The Present Participle of every verb is, in its simplest form, the Present Root with I annexed after final I, I, I, I, I and I, as QETI Climbing; WITH Being; QTI Leaving; TIT Receiving; QETI Climbing; WITH Hearing; or with I annexed after final I, I, I, I, and all vowels, as III Beating; III Gnawing; QTIII Falling; III Rejoicing; QTIII Going; and the Past Participle in its simplest form is the Perfect Root with I annexed, as INTIN Spoken, or with I annexed, as INTIN Pulled out: or, where there is no Perfect Root, then the Present Root, with I or I, as the case may be, added to the completive auxiliary as INTIN or I, as the case may be, added to the completive auxiliary

From either of these Participles may be formed the Active Participle, by taking the Present or Perfect Root and adding to it the word 35%, or 35%, or 35%, or 35%, signifying the Doer,

Agent, or Instrument. The phrase thus formed can be used either as an adjective or as noun.

EXAMPLES:-

द्धना नार्केर्र (or नक्षर्) साम्बर्ग्री The sheep-killer. द्धना नार्केर्र (or नक्षर्) साम्बर्ग्ग्री से रे | The sheep-killing man.

These, it is obvious, can also be rendered periphrastically, thus: He who kills, or killed, the sheep.

But the simple Participles, Present or Past, can also themselves be used periphrastically, by regarding either as an adjective and putting it in the genitive case if it precedes its noun, or in the nominative if it follows its noun.

EXAMPLES:-

The work that I do (the by me doing work) itself bears witness that the Father hath sent me (to have sent me). (John v. 36).

And the Father which sent me (the me having sent Father) hath also borne witness of me. (John v. 37).

The above illustrate the adjective phrase preceding its noun. The following are examples of the Participial Adjective following its noun:—

মার্দ্রের নির্দান ন

The man who is coming: The coming man.

The book that was sent: The sent book.

In the Colloquial the construction of these Active Participles and Periphrastic Participial phrases is in $\mathbb{Z}[5]$ for animates, human or otherwise, and in $\mathbb{Z}[5]$ or $\mathbb{Z}[5]$ for inanimates, in both cases annexed to the root. Here, too, the expression or phrase may be treated either as a noun or as an adjective, and in the latter case it may precede or follow its noun.

EXAMPLES :-

ঐন্ধান্ধ শ্রী শ্বী ।

Or:-

शेर्ष्णिट स्राप्तन्ते।

#2.चै.य.भाष्य.ची.त्रचा.त।

Or:-

यनायाः भेरः कुंचा सम्बर्दे।

Й হে। মাদ্রবন্দ্রী মী दे।

Or :-

ই।প্রৈম্বাসামব্যর।

শ্বব-বর্কুব-মাদ্রব-র্কী-ধর্মা-।।

Or:—

ধনা:মাশ্লব:র্ক্রর:মাদ্রে:ব।

केंद्र केंद्र प्रमुं निर्देशिय हैं।

Or :--

विट क्ट्रिंट के उन्हें उन्हें चित्र

के:इंके:इंस्ट्रिंग्वेट:वेट:ब्रेंट:दे।

Or :---

निम्बूनके उक्त के के सम्मान

In the case of verbs with no Future root, the Literary Future Active Participle is formed thus:—

के:इंके:इंप्लेंस्विन्तुं विस्कूटिने। or

perhaps বর্ণী ক্রু অব মব বি ক্রি ইন ব

अर्बेट अप्तर्मी औरी or perhaps

सर्वेट कुं प्येष प्राची से हो।

In the Colloquial 5 is used thus:—

के:इ'के'इ'५भूँ कुंदे'-वैदःश्र्टें र The coming man: the man who is coming; the comer.

The grunting pig; the pig that is grunting; the grunter.

The man who came.

The pig that grunted.

The growing tree; the tree that grows.

The grown tree: the tree that grew.

The tree that is to grow, or will grow.

The man who is to see, or who will see.

The tree that is to grow, or that will grow.

As regards the rendering of the Passive Voice, see § 31, ix. A. Relative Pronouns.

The Future Participle, in Literary Tibetan, is expressed by the Present Participle put in the terminative case with 5, and followed by 5^{-5} , signifying About to..., or To be...ed. In fact, formally, it is the same as the Present Infinitive of the Passive Verb.

Also by the Future Root with \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} annexed, signifying For., ing; or by the Present or Future Root with \mathfrak{Z}^{\bullet} annexed.

EXAMPLES :-

द्धरायात्त्रव। ट्र-इषश्चाम्ब्रिट्-यर-चु-चट्ट-खमा-ड्र- ₩

We were accounted as sheep for the slaughter (To be slaughtered sheep). (Rom. viii. 36).

Whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning. (Rom. xv. 4).

The Colloquial is the Root with

মান্দ্রীর বিশ্ব বিশ্

কুনি or মন, or মন annexed:—
We were regarded as sheep for the slaughter.

(or ক্রিন্ট্র') ব্রিন্ট্রের মন্ত্রি ক্রিন্ট্রের মন্ত্রি প্রক্রিন্ত্র বিজ্ঞান

Whatever was formerly written was written for our learning.

Many Participial expressions with a Present or Past signification are also formed by annexing to the bare Verbal Root, or to the Participle, the Auxiliary Verbal Particles already dealt with at an earlier stage of this paragraph. The following are all annexed to the Root:—

බ, நீ நீ, கீ.ing. Present signification. Periphrastic form.

भोत, मोत, पोत, पोतing. Present. Sometimes periphrastic.

 $\hat{\vec{5}}$, $\hat{\vec{5}}$, $\hat{\vec{5}}$...ing ...ed. Present or Past according to root.

ਹੋੜ, ਕ੍ਰੈਫ਼, ਸ੍ਰੈਫ਼ ...ing. ...ed. Usually Present, but sometimes Past.

The following are annexed to the Participle:—

E.—Gerunds.

This name is another instance of the attempt that has somewhat unfortunately been made to present the mysteries of Tibetan in the guise of western nomenclature. What has already been dealt with under the heading *Verbal Noun* was really the Gerund in the Nominative case (equivalent to the Present Infinitive); and the constructions usually called Gerunds in Tibetan Grammars are really a kind of Participial expressions; none other, in fact, than those which we have just been considering.

Here reference may be made to a form of the Gerund in the genitive case which is common in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, though it might equally well have apppeared under the heading Verbal Noun.

EXAMPLES:

ষ্ট্রবার্ক বার্কিন ক্রিন্দ বা

चर्रुव् सदि सेनास्स् । इर् . ग्रीसःब्र्सः सदे . चार्सः ता : झेना . सरः

We ought to give the more earnest heed to the things that were heard (of the taking pains by us as regards the heard-things there is the more propriety or necessity). (Heb. ii. 1).

५ दे हे हैं नहीं (or हैं स्पर्ध or हैं क्वि है) रक्ष रें

Now is the time to buy, i.e. of buying = for buying.

(N.B.—This last is Colloquial.)

F.—Indicative.

(a) Present.

In Literary Tibetan this is formed with the Present Root in several ways, some of which are as follows:—

1.—By the simple Root for all persons, singular and plural; as ང་འ་ནོ་ I go; ৣ১་৫ឝོ་་ Thou goest; ឝོང་འ་ནོ་ He goes; ང་རྡ་མས་འ་ནོ་ We go, etc.; ངས་གདོང་ I send, ৣ১১་শৣয়་བ།དོང་ Thou sendest, etc.

2.—At the end of sentences, by the simple Root as above, with the addition of $\widetilde{\mathbf{A}}$ in the case of verbs like $\widetilde{\mathbf{A}}$, the root of which ends in a vowel, and, in the case of other verbs, reduplicating the final letter of the root, and putting over it; as $\widetilde{\mathbf{A}}$ $\widetilde{\mathbf{$

In fact, throughout all conjugations the singular and plural are alike.

Where, however, the Root ends in \mathfrak{A}' , another \mathfrak{A}' with \sim superposed is not added, but the \sim is put over the first \mathfrak{A}' . Thus 553. I drive.

3.—By putting the Infinitive into the Terminative case with $\vec{\lambda}$ and adding the auxiliary $\vec{\beta}\vec{\gamma}$ or $\vec{\beta}\vec{\gamma}$ or Do, or Does, for all persons; as $\vec{\lambda}$ as $\vec{\lambda}$ as $\vec{\lambda}$ or $\vec{\lambda}$ or $\vec{\lambda}$ as $\vec{$

- 4.—A rather obsolete form is to add the $\Im 5$ or $\Im 5$ direct to the Root; as $\Xi \Im 7 \Im 5$ I do go, etc., $\Xi \Im \Im 5$ I do know, etc.
- 5.—Periphrastically, by the simple Participle Present, combined with the appropriate conjugation of A_{5}^{3} or \widetilde{W}_{5}^{3} To be, or any of their elegant or honorific forms. But this is rather a doubtful form and in any case old.

EXAMPLES :--

6.—Periphrastically, by connecting the root with the appropriate conjugation of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}$, $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}$ or $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}$ according to the rule relating to the final letter of the root, as:—

7.—Periphrastically, by connecting the root with the appropriate elegant or honorific form of $\widetilde{\mathsf{W}}_{\overline{1}}$ or $\widetilde{\mathsf{Q}}_{\overline{1}}$, the link being the auxiliary particle $\widetilde{\mathsf{Q}}_{\overline{1}}$ or $\widetilde{\mathsf{Q}}_{\overline{1}}$. This is, however, obsolete.

EXAMPLES:—

EN निर्देश के श्री

I am sending.

For Thou art sending.

विद्रामीशामीहिंदानिक्षकेशा, or माहता, He is sending.

And:-

दशःमोर्ट्रिः चल्निः चलुमारा।

मिन्गीसमार्देर मिन्सस्य

मिंद्र-मीश्र-मोर्द्र-प्रतिश्र-प्रतिश्वनाश्च, or अदतः, or प्रतिमाश्चरम्

As regards the Colloquial, when the Present Root of a verb ends in an inherent W, or G, or in or , that Present Root is generally used for the Present Indicative. With all other verbs the Colloquial, according to Mr. Bell, usually adopts the Perfect Root, if any; or, as seems more likely, at least the sound of it. When writing the Colloquial it is advisable, or allowable, to employ the proper root.

The formation of the tense then proceeds thus:—

- 1.—The Root (Present or Perfect) for all persons, as হোটা I see or look; মোন্টা I bring forth; মোলু I request; but either মোন্টা or মোন্টা I send.
- 2.—Periphrastically. The Root (Present or Perfect) combined with the appropriate conjugation of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{1}}$. To be; the connecting link being $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{1}}$, $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{1}}$, or $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{1}}$, or $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{1}}$ (though $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{\overline{1}}$ generally takes the place of these last two), agreeably to the final letter of the root.

EXAMPLES:-

दशःभृःभृःसिर्। विरु:५३विर: (or विरः) भैःदर

I am looking.

ন্ত্রিন (or র্বিন) শ্রী নেরুল। Thou art starting.
নি স্ত্রীবা (or স্ত্রীবাধা) শ্রী অবিন, or He is arriving.
নিরুলা, or অবিনামির।

(b)—Imperfect.

This expresses the idea of the Periphrastic Past: Was, wast, were ing.

In Literary Tibetan_it may be rendered by the Perfect root (if any), with \Im or \Im annexed, combined with the Indicative Present of Literary $\Im \Im$ \Im To be. Thus:—

অচ'ব্ন্ত্রেঅ'ই'র্ন্সিহ্মর্ম্ব্রেম্ন্রেম্ব্রর্ And Saul was consenting unto his death. (Acts viii. 1.)

Or it may take the form of the Perfect Root (if any) with one of the auxiliary Verbal Particles or Suspensives annexed, and combined with $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$:

EXAMPLES:-

মি'মামে'র ব্যাস্থ্র বিশ্ব বি

Probably however, it would generally be found put participially. Thus:—

ইনি বুমা মু জ নাম্ম ক্ষম শূ নাম্ম বিষয় শূ নাম বিষয় শূ নাম্ম বিষ

This almost endlessly Suspensive Construction, as the ordinary feature of a Tibetan sentence, which really only contains an absolute statement at the end, must never be forgotten.

In the Colloquial the *Imperfect Indicative* has no special form. It simply employs the Present Tense construction, leaving the context (generally some adverb like [ANINI Yesterday, MAINI Recently, or MAINI Long ago), to indicate the Past idea, if it exists.

Examples:-

শিশ্ব শাংলা দ্রীন্থ শাংলা দ্রা শাংলা শাংলা প্রাপ্ত প্র শাংলা প্র শাংলা শাংলা

धून भाषा नार्येन विष्य के The herd was roving about in the forest.

स्र-से से्द्र-दात्रने प्रिन्य दन्न। Ancient

 $Anciently\,man\,resembled\,a\,\,monkey.$

(c)—Perfect.

This, which expresses the idea *Have*, hast or has ed, is rendered, in both Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, by the Perfect Root combined with the appropriate elements of $\widetilde{\mathsf{WST}}$ To be, which, it will be remembered, are not quite the same in the two modes. Thus, in Literary Tibetan the construction is as follows:—

दश्रमासुदश्र-यायीक्ते

I have spoken.

र्हिं गुैक्ष मह्यदक्ष सन्दुना में or, occasionally, धेन दें।

 ${ Thou\ hast\ spoken. }$

म्ट्रिम्बासमास्ट्रस्य प्रमुक्ति

He has spoken.

This tense is not infrequently used for our Past Indefinite. Thus:—

८ वे र्ने व पर्ने तम् स्वार्थि स्थाया भीव वि

To this end came I forth. (Mark i. 39.)

In Colloquial the construction is as follows:-

<u> হের নার্থী হের না সূথী।</u>

I have spoken.

विंद्रः गुरुषः माश्चदश्रायः तुनुमाः or देद्र।

Thou hast spoken.

নিম্নামুদ্মান্দ্র or, occasionally, He has spoken.

५रुगा

This also is often used for our Past Indefinite. Thus:-

मि: सट : दश द : प्रेश या प्येत ।

I bought this horse yesterday.

Another Colloquial rendering of the Perfect Tense is to add JE or NE or US or JU, or even NE JU or JENE, to the Perfect Root, if any; the construction being the same for all persons. Thus:

दशःश्वशः<िरःॲटशःॲ^र।

दशन्योक्तः कत्ना

मूर्याल्याची सूच वैदः।

B-7-9-31-1

मिस्र हे ने निमान उर्ने से दिन देने

· I have brought the box.

I have read the book.

He has received the letter.

The dog has died.

The suit has been decided.

Certain verbs usually take JT in preference to NT, and others NT in preference to JT. In this connection practice will make perfect. The following are a few that take NT, namely, JTY Todo; NTTO build; NTY To fear; NTY To die; NTY To set out, depart, start; NTY To understand; NTY To steal; NTY To set out, To be finished; NTY and NTY To come, arrive; NTY To burn; and the following are a few that take JT, namely, NTY To receive, get, obtain; NTY To hear; NTY To see; NTY To see; NTY To throw; NTY To hear. JT is generally seen with the 1st person, and where this is so the other persons usually take NTY!

(d) PAST INDEFINITE.

In Literary Tibetan, at the end of sentences, this consists of the plain Perfect Root for all persons, with the final letter generally reduplicated.

EXAMPLES :-

ने ने क्या ने निया हुटा नु र स्टिश न्या की जी.

Then they came up to Jesus and took him. (Matt. xxvi. 50.)

मिट कुल किट कुल नदे छैर पुंचे के ।

He came forth conquering and to conquer. (Rev. vi. 2.)

When the verb possesses no Perfect Root the Present Root is used.

EXAMPLES:-

WE'EN'ই'' র নাজ্ব জিনা প্র ইনিষ্টার্ম And I saw another angel ascend from the sun rising. (Rev. vii. 2.)

But in phrases like the following, introductory to what a speaker has said, the Perfect Participle is always used:—

लु.चैश.चिश्वेटश.च।

Jesus said. (John XX, 17.)

হীম অমা মাদ্য ব্যাম বিছে। দুটি দাব্য Mary Magdalene came and said to the disciples. (John xx. 18.)

ঈ নাব্য নাব্য সাক্ষ্ম নাত্র সাক্ষ্ম নাত্র

But note the following construction where the verb, being at the end of the sentence, is not put participally, but in the form of the plain Perfect Root again:—

Sometimes one sees:—

ब्रेशमासुद्धाःयाम्ब्रेगर्ने।

Thus it has been said. (1 Cor. x. 7.)

Note also the following construction, where 37'4' for she could does not occur at the end of a sentence, and is put participially:—

तुर् सेर् गुँश ना प्रमुदाय पुराय प्रमाय भेता।

The woman hath done what she could. (Mark xiv. 8.)

In the Colloquial the Past Indefinite is rendered by the plain Perfect Root, if any, or, if none, then by the Present Root, with \mathfrak{F}^{Γ} or \mathfrak{F}^{Γ} added; and this holds for all persons.

EXAMPLES :-

ସମ୍ବର୍ଗ ପ୍ରମ୍ବର ପ୍ରମ୍ବର ଅଧିକା ନୁକ୍ଷଣ ନ୍ତର I sent my clerk to Court to-day. ସମ୍ବର୍ଗ୍ୟ ପ୍ରମ୍ବର୍

जन्नाशःश्रा दशःल्यःमीःब्रुचःवैदः।

I received the letter all right.

In these cases, however, it would be just as correct to use the Perfect Tense: \\Passaction \Tensor \\Tensor \T

(c) PLUPERFECT.

This tense, which expresses the idea Had....ed, is seldom or never seen in Literary Tibetan at the end of a sentence, i.e. as an absolute statement. It is usually met with in an introductory or suspensory clause, and is then rendered participially with a past signification. Thus:—

८८. नु.ज.चश्रम.धुं.चर्ट.चश्र

And when he had considered the thing; i.e. Having considered, etc. (Acts xii. 12.)

विद्याः बेर्द्यस्

When she had thus said; i.e. Having thus said. (John xx. 14.)

Sometimes it is turned into an adjective phrase, i.e. the Past Participle is put in the genitive case. Thus:—

ल.मेपु.भी.सैर.चर्चातपु.चर्याता

Where the body of Jesus had lain. (John xx. 12.)

In phrases like the following it is constructed by combining \(\tilde{\Sigma}\)\(\tilde{\Sigma}\) with the Perfect Participle, thus making a sort of Past Infinitive.

Examples:--

ਤ੍ਰਿੰਜ਼ ਵੇਂ ਸ਼੍ਰੀਸ ਮਾਬੇਰ ਪਾ ਘੋਰ ਪਾ ਸ਼ਕਾ ਬੁੱਕਾ । I heard you had gone (you to have gone) to Darjeeling.

নিন্দ্রমন্ত্রান্ত্রমান

When it does appear at the end of a sentence, it may take the form of the Perfect Root, followed by 5%, and combined with the Present Indicative of W5%. Thus:—

Or better:-

Sometimes, e.g. in cases in which the direct mode of speech is adopted, the Pluperfect is avoided in favour of the Perfect.

EXAMPLES:-

मिट मीश देश्चर उद्याट या मशिटशता इस्रम्य जा हुट हो। इस्रम्य जा है स्थान व्याप्त हुट हो। इस्रम्य श्वी रेज स्थान व्याप्त है।

Mary Magdalene cometh (having come) and telleth (told) the disciples, I have seen the Lord; and how that he had (has) said these things unto her (me). (John xx. 18.)

The Colloquial has no special Pluperfect Tense. Any of the preceding Past Tenses belonging to it may be used (whichever is the more convenient), or even perhaps the Literary construction in 55° attached to the Perfect Root and combined with \$\wideta_5^{\infty}|

EXAMPLES :-

मिश्चेनश्चारान्दाराञ्च श्रीटा।

When he arrived I had gone.

८८५६ के मितार मी त्राया विकास में I had already sent him the book.

मिट्टाश्चायावंशायाद्यायाचा

He had never been to Lhasa.

(Note.— Tr (pron. nyúng) Ever, or, with a negative, Never, is in all tenses attached to the root, and treated as part of the verb.)

In other respects the Colloquial constructions are much like the Literary.

Examples:-

শিষামান্ত্র নার্ম্মানা or মার্মান্ত্রিক I did not know that he had married. त्राटश.जेश.श.श्र्ट.।

D. 约E. 1.2.2.1

When he had gone.

(f) FUTURE.

The Literary construction of this tense is either with the plain Future Root (if any) of the verb, or with the Present Infinitive in the Terminative case, combined with the auxiliary verbs and a become, or be; J'A' To become or do; and REA' or WEA To come. The construction with 5.7 is Intensive. There is also another construction with the Present or Future Root combined with 5 and the have to. All these constructions, save the last, are used with all persons.

EXAMPLES: -

Eश्राद्योकादे होतायान्याद्रांदे । रश'र्श'क'रें हिर्'श'र्गोर्हें प्रराद्यम्पर'र्हे I shall send thee the book. दशःद्योकःदे: हिदःशः महिंदः यदः नुते ।

 $\begin{array}{c} \text{ Γ = $$

In the Colloquial the Simple Future is formed either with $\widetilde{W} \Sigma^*$ (for all persons) annexed to the Perfect Root (or probably more correctly to the Future Root), or with the Present Root combined with the Present Indicative of $\widetilde{W} \Sigma^* T$ To be, the link between them being \widetilde{W} , \widetilde{W} , or \widetilde{W} , according to rule with reference to the last letter of the Root.

EXAMPLES:--

The other Future tenses, as known to Tibetan, are only found in connection with the Subjunctive and Conditional Moods. The first is similar to the Perfect tense. Thus:—

However, with this the Simple Future may also be used.

The second is formed with the Perfect Participle combined with the Indicative Present of $\widetilde{\mathsf{W5}}$. Thus:—

Or even thus :-

N.B.—The Future Root is seldom used in the Colloquial, unless, in the case of verbs like \$\sqrt{15\sqrt{5}}\sqrt{3}\sqrt{},\$ it really lurks in the sound of \$\sqrt{5\sqrt{5}}\sqrt{3}\sqrt{}\$ as said to be sometimes used in the Future tense, and in the Participles, etc. Even in Literary Tibetan it is not met with very much.

G.—Subjunctive or Conditional.

When the sentence consists of a conditional clause dependent upon a preceding hypothetical clause in the Present Tense with $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{N}}$. If, or \mathbb{N} alone, the conditional clause takes the Indefinite Future in Literary $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{N}}$ or Colloquial $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{N}}$ for all persons. In this Literary and Colloquial Tibetan are the same.

EXAMPLES:—

माभ: २ हिंद. व. ८८. चमान . व. व. चार्डश. चर. If ye love me ye will keep my commandments.

दहेंद. व. ८८. चमान . व. व. चार्डश. चर.

दहेंद. व. ८८. चमान . व. व. चार्डश. चर.

दमान . इ. व. ८८. चमान . व. व. चार्डश. चर.

दमान . इ. व. ८८. चमान . व. व. व. चार्डश. चर.

चुँर गुँ रेर्)।

When the preceding clause is in the Past Tense, and the conditional clause signifies I, Thou, He, etc., would..., this last clause, both in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, takes the Perfect Participle, combined with $\[\widetilde{\mathbf{Wo}} \[\mathbf{Z} \] \]$ in the Present Indicative, which, it will be remembered, is not quite the same in the two languages. Thus, in Literary Tibetan:—

দ্রিন্ধ্রম্প্রাম্থ্র বিষ্ণান্ধর বিষ্ণান্ধ বিষ্ণান্ধ

ित्रिंगुश्चरमार्डश्यरम्बह्दा श्रीस्थः If ye loved me ye would rejoice (i.e. be glad.) (John xiv. 28.) त्माद्माद्मरमार्थश्ये ज् or त्रुमान्।

The Colloquial is much the same as the above.

EXAMPLES:-

मुँद र्केश दाद निमाय प्रेक्ष दि प्राप्त If you knew me you would also know my Father.

Or, for all persons:-

८४.टू. पुरायालेश

I would know.

हिंदिकी सामित्र की समामित्र का हिंदा

Thou wouldst know.

मिंश टें क्रिय में दें, or वर्मा

He would know.

But, when the preceding clause is in the Past Tense, and the conditional clause signifies Would have...d, then, both in Literary and Colloquial Tibetan, this last clause ought to be constructed with the Perfect Participle combined with the appropriate forms of $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{7}$ in the Present Indicative. Thus, in Literary Tibetan:—

८शःश्रुशःयः भेर्

I would have told.

हिर्गीशस्त्रायातरुन।

Thou wouldst have told.

মিন্থান্থ্র প্রাম্থান্ত, or বিচুদা, or আন্ত্র He would have told.

The Colloquial construction is similar.

EXAMPLES:-

৭ইবের্মামার্মীর বিষ্ণার্ট্রর র্জনিব্দের্বার্মার্মির or বিপ্রবৃত্তির or বিপ্রবৃত্তির or বিপ্রবৃত্তির

Were it not so I would have told you.

म्बर or ॲट्झर्ॲर्'स्स etc.

If I had asked you, would you have come?

मिँस'द'स'दैस'दासेद' or दैस'सेद्देन' $\frac{1}{2}$ He would not have asked me.

H.—Potential.

In the Colloquial this is formed by adding the auxiliary 372 To be able, properly conjugated, to the Present Root of the verb it governs. Thus:—

PRESENT.

The Literary construction with 374 is as follows:—

PRESENT.

I can

বিহেনীমা

বিহেনীমা

He can

Present.

I can

He can

PAST.

ह्यामिट्र युवाया पिर् रे ।

I could have sent.

(And so on as in the Colloquial.)

But the Literary construction may also be with the auxiliary 5 % To be able, which, unlike 5 % governs the Infinitive put in the Terminative case. Thus:—

PRESENT.

মেনাইনেম-বুম-র্ম। (And so throughout.)

I can send.

Past.

दशमार्ने वर बुशय प्येन ने ।
हिन् गुश्यमार्ने वर वर्षाय प्येन ने ।

 $I \ could \ send.$

Thou couldst send.

He could send.

I could have sent.

Thou couldst have sent.

He could have sent.

N.B.—It is important to remember that $\mathfrak{I}^{\mathfrak{I}}$, both in Literary Tibetan and the Colloquial, is annexed to the *Root* of the verb it governs.

I.—Probability, etc.

Phrases expressive of the *likelihood* or *possibility* of doing any thing are, in Literary Tibetan, rendered by means of the auxiliary verb \$\sqrt{5}.7\sqrt{7}\text{ To be possible, or by the expression \$\sqrt{9}\sqrt{8}\text{ Who knows?} = May be.

EXAMPLES:-

शुः विशः दात्रे तें or वर्जे तर वर्जी स्ट्री I may go; perhaps, possibly, probably I shall go.

दशमितिरं (or even मितिरंगरं) श्रेतिरें । I may send.

निर्णीशमहिंदः (or महिंदः परः) श्रेर् हैं। Thou mayest send.

मिंद्र मीक्ष मार्नेद्र (or मार्नेद्र पर) श्रेनेद्र । He may send.

दसःमिर्दिः श्रेर् प्राप्ते व बि might send.

मुँद मुँ अपनार्दे स्थाद दुना ना , Thou mightest send.

or धेंदर्दे।

मिंद्र मी अपनिर्देद श्री द्या प्या के बिंद्र मिंद्र मिंद्

दशमित्रिः श्रीत्राया I might have sent.

निर्णुश्रानिर्द्राश्चर्यात्र्नानि Thou mightest have sent.

मिंद्र मीश मोर्नेद श्रेत याद द मार्ने, He might have sent.

or \(\widge{3} \)

The auxiliary 3572 To be, combined with the Root or the Infinitive, put in the Terminative case, also conveys the idea of probability or likelihood. Thus:—

श्रे तर्रे तर्मे र तर्म। ८श.टे.क्रेर.ट्रेब्रिश.चर.पट्ना। युमायानेतम्बासासुत्रन्ता।

This man is probably going.

I shall probably have to give it.

That bottle is likely to crack.

In the Colloquial শ্ৰুন, or স্ট্ৰাটুক্ত Perhaps, or the auxiliaries ঊর্মান্ত্র, or ঊর্ম্মা, may be used instead of য়্র্মা

N.B.— অব্না is sometimes written অব্না Which of these two is the more correct form is somewhat uncertain.

EXAMPLES :-

श्र.वेशप्टादर्गेमा।

I may go, or be going.

शुःविशाहिरियमें मीयर्मा, or रेर्।

Probably thou wilt go.

शुः विश्वामि दिवाँ मी देर, or दर्म।

It is likely he will go.

मार्डमा नेद'क' द' द र्गे मी।

Perhaps I shall go.

(And so on, as above.)

दःदर्भो मा प्येद या ५५%, or प्येद में ।

I may be going.

(And so throughout.)

द'र्शेद'न'पेब'रा'दर्, or पेब'र्ने ।

I might be going.

(And so throughout.)

दःश्रेदः वः भेरः यावतः or भेरः में ।

I might have been going.

(And so throughout.)

मारीमा नेर क' दार्शेद मारीका

I might go.

माउँमा नु देन हिंद र्श्वाद प्रमा, or देत्। Thou mightest go.

महिमानुद्देन मिर्ग्सेट मारेदा, or बहुमा

He might go.

माठिमा नेदातारा राज्या

I might have gone.

मिंडिमा चेदा दिन स्थित स्था का त्री मांडिमा चेदा दिन स्था का किया के मांडिमा चेदा दिन स्था के स्था के

J.—Hortative.

In the Colloquial this is rendered by $5\overline{\eta}$ $\overline{\lambda}$ or vulgarly $5\overline{\eta}$ $\overline{\lambda}$. To need, To be necessary, To be obliged or compelled; also where we use Must, Ought, Should, Have to. Like $\overline{\eta}$ $\overline{\lambda}$ To be able, it is annexed to the Root, not to the Infinitive, and is used with or without the auxiliaries $\overline{\lambda}$ $\overline{\lambda}$ and $\overline{\lambda}$ $\overline{\lambda}$ With this verb the subject should be put in the Nominative or Dative (not the Agentive) case.

EXAMPLES:-

५ न्यू ८ १२ देने इं १ कि प्राप्त or ६ ने मि भि भि । Now I must start.

८ द्यों क वित्यानि दिन्दि का दिने कि I have to send him the book.

व्यन्।

८ इसे क विकास महित्र इमें इस स्पेत्। I had to send him the book.

८ द्यों क विं ता महिंद देने नि भी बा I shall have to send him the book.

प्राथित हो हो हो प्राथित के प्रा

चेंदि ।

In Literary Tibetan the construction for all persons is in 5 7 7 7, not added to the Root, but to the Infinitive put in the Terminative case. Thus:—

विंद्र दे त्येय यर द्वेश हो। दंदे त्येय यर द्वेश हो।

He must increase but I must decrease. (John iii. 30).

There is, however, another construction for all persons in \mathfrak{Z} or \mathfrak{Z} (Future Root of \mathfrak{Z}), added to the Infinitive in the Terminative case, or to the Root, but sometimes used by itself.

EXAMPLES:-

देर. ¥शश. च≅ट. च. चेर. च.ज. क्रें.च.भेुर. चर.भ्रु.चेर्रे ।

वस्रवास्त्र केंबा के अवास्त्र मु।

ब्रिशक्षारयार्ने चिष्टिति है।

मार विमायनमा केर से पर्रेर या

रे'रमाम्बर्यस्य से'नुदे।

(पश्राप्त प्राप्त राज्य Vol. में leaf 174).

वश्चमः न्यः वृत्तः त्र्युः वरः न्यः ।

মন্ধ ক্রম নম্ব ম নে ছ্বা নম ন্ত্র | (Dulva, Vol. 5, Leaf 30). Let us not (i.e. we should, ought, must not) be weary in well-doing. (Gal. vi. 9).

All should hear this precept;

Having heard, should keep it well;

Whatever things we do not ourselves like;

Should not be done to others.

(Tangyur).

You must exert yourself and arise;

And walk according to Buddha's teaching.

There may be said to be still another construction in \mathfrak{F} added to the Future Root (or to the Present Root if there is no Future Root) combined with $\mathfrak{F} \mathfrak{F} \mathfrak{F}$ in the Present Indicative. This expresses the idea of I am to, or I have to. Thus:—

दशःमाऽटः<u>र्</u>मुःयोत् ।

हिँदाण्डीशमान्द्रम् ।

ৰ্দ্ৰিশ্ব। শাসু দেখিৰ।

८.८मूँ.मुं.लूब।

हिँद्देश्या कुरद्वा

मिट दम् कु भेषा

I have to send.

Thou hast to send.

He has to send.

I am to go.

Thou art to go.

He is to go.

And also another in W Thus:-

८.ज.चिर्टा.ल.रूरी

I have (or am) to send.

८.ज.पर्म्.ल.५८।

I have (or am) to go.

K.--Purposive.

To express In order that, In order to, With the object of, or other similar phrase, the Infinitive is put in the Genitive case, followed, in the Colloquial, by 55%, and, in Literary Tibetan, by 35%, or 55%, the construction being the same for all persons.

EXAMPLES:-

ে মান্ত্র (or বচ্চ) বর্ণ্ট্রেম So that I may (or might) send. or খ্রীমান্ত or ব্রিন্ট্রা

মে প্রাথি বিশ্ব মে বিশ্ব মে বিশ্ব মা প্রাথি He wrote to me in order that I might know.

দ্বি- ন্বাব- ব্র- এই- এই- ট্র- হেম ই I spoke thus with the object of pleasing you.

मिंद्रा मिंद्रा प्रदे देव प्रदे देव प्रदेश के देश मिंद्रा He is reading the book in order to learn law.

L.—Precative.

EXAMPLES :-

বেই ব্যাবিশ্ব ক্রিনা উনা।

Let these go their way. (John xviii. 8.)

হয় ভ্রিব মে নার্মিম হার্না উন্দার্কি নার্কি নার্কি নার্কি নার্কি নার্কি মে Let me send thee some tea.

क्ष्मार्ज्याश्चान्द्रः।

If the governed verb is active and transitive, the subject is in the Agentive.

मानिक चाँ इस्र गुँ स्ट मी मानिक चाँ Let the dead bury their dead. (Matt. viii. 22.)

The Colloquial construction may also be in [7], but it is usually in [7] (the Perfect Root used as an Imperative); but in either case only the Root of the governed verb is used.

EXAMPLE: -

N.B.— ইন্ধা in the polite expression ইন্ধান্ত, is merely the Colloquial way of pronouncing ন্নিধা in the polite Literary expression ন্নিধান্ত, Please, Be so good as, etc.

M.—Permissive.

In Literary Tibetan the construction is in 5π To be allowed or permitted; the governed verb being generally put in the Instrumental case of the Infinitive, and the subject in the Agentive, if connected with a Transitive verb.

EXAMPLES:-

दशः निर्देरः चशः क्रेनाः मा । विदः ग्रीकाः निर्देरः चशः क्रेनाः मा । विदः निर्देरः चशः क्रेनाः मा । दशः निर्देरः चशः क्रेनाः मा । दशः निर्देरः चशः क्रेनाः चा । दशः निर्देरः चशः क्रेनाः चा ।

I may (or am allowed to) send.

Thou mayest send.

He may send.

I was allowed to send.

I shall be allowed to send.

Sometimes the construction in $\mathfrak{Z} \mathfrak{T} \mathfrak{T}$. To be suitable, or proper, is used idiomatically instead of the above.

EXAMPLE :--

طاد، علا، شاد، عد بير ا

Whatever has been done is proper, which is the ordinary idiom for You may do as you please, or whatever you like. The Colloquial construction is in $\widetilde{\mathfrak{SI}}$ added to the Root of the governed verb. Subject in Nominative for Intransitive verbs.

EXAMPLES :-

८.४ में क्रिया, or क्रिया मी भेरित।

~~~

हिंदि तर्भे केंगा, or केंगा में तर्भा।

मित्रें केंमा, or केंमा में भिर,

or त्रुमा, or स्प्रिंगरेर।

८:वर्गें केंग या भेंदा, or केंग भेंदा।

८.४ में क्र्मामी लंबे. or क्र्मालं रा

हिंद्र त्रें कें नामी त्रुमा, or देदा, or कें माध्यें पा

मिंद्रमें केंग मी रेड or केंग सेंद्र।

I may (or am permitted to) go.

Thou mayest go.

He may go.

I might have gone, or would have been permitted to go.

I shall be allowed to go.

Thou wilt be allowed to go.

He will be allowed to go.

But with Transitive verbs the subject is in the Agentive.

Examples:-

टश.चिरट.कूची।

I may (or am allowed to) send.

८श.चन्द्र-क्रिना, or क्रिना:य:भेन्।

I was allowed to send.

दशःमा**र**टःकेनाः, or सर्द्रःकेनाःभेरः।

I shall be allowed to send.

Also note:—

प्रति । निष्ट सेना परिते विष्ट भाग अमा Are we allowed to smoke in this room?

# N.—Optative.

In Literary Tibetan this may be formed by putting the verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive and adding JT, the Imperative of AJT. To be, To become, followed by J' If, and UNC an interjection.

EXAMPLE:-

दशःमोर्टेट्यरःमुरुषःष्रदः।

Would, or Oh, that I might send.

Another Literary construction is in  $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$ , the Imperative of  $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$  or  $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$ . To come; the verb being similarly put in the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

EXAMPLES:-

८श.चर्निट.चर र्वेचा.क्रमा

Would that I might send.

ब्रिंदःश्रीःद्रायः वदेः व्यवादिद्दाः वदः विन्।

May you without fatigue proceed happily. (Das.)

Another Literary construction is in  $\P$  If, combined with the expression  $\P$   $\P$  How suitable, or excellent.

EXAMPLES :-

८.४ मूं.य. दु.स.२८.।

Oh that, or would that, I were going.

E.M. શૂE. 4. g.M. 2E. 1

Would that I had not gone.

दश:न्योक:ने:हिंन्:याः क्षेत्र:केंम्।याः धीनः बः केः

Would I were permitted to give you the book.

₩.오∟.

In the Colloquial the Root or the Infinitive of the verb is used, followed by  $\sqrt[3]{1}$ 

EXAMPLES :-

८.८चूं (य.) र्जुचा

Would I were going.

दशमिद्दः (यः) वृत्ता

Oh that I might send.

The following Colloquialism is also heard:—

ट.चोर्ट्रेट.व.क्रूची.त.ला

Oh that I might send.

८.४ मूं.४ क्रुच.त.छ।

Would I were going.

## O.—Imperative.

It will be remembered that many verbs have no distinctively Imperative Roots. Such, for instance, are NATO To see, and NATO To receive, each of which has only one Root throughout; and SATO To weep and RATO To flee, each of which has only a Present and a Perfect Root. In all such cases the Present Root is used in Literary Tibetan for the Imperative, with the addition of the Imperative sign RATO, RATO, agreeably to the final letter of the Root. The further addition of SEO has a softening effect, and so has INCO A politer form adds RATO, to the Root, and a still more respectful form adds RATO, to the Root.

Rules, it is true, are given in some grammars for the formation of the Imperative Root, but, as they are somewhat complex, and, moreover, do not always work, it is just as easy and much safer to look up in the dictionary the Imperative Root of each individual verb, and remember it as well as one can.

Prohibitives are formed with N' (never N' except in the case of  $5\overline{1}$ N' and 5) preceding either the Imperative Root or the other part of the verb, if a compound one, e.g.  $5\overline{1}$ N'  $5\overline{1}$ N'

With some verbs, even though they have Imperative Roots of their own, the Present Roots, and not the Imperative Roots, are used for Prohibitions.

#### EXAMPLES:-

ম্ন্তি To go; Present Root ম্ন্তি; Imperative Root ম্নিটে Go; Prohibitive স্বেন্তি (pron. Man-po.) Do not go.

35'Z' To do; Present Root 35'; Imperative Root 38' or sometimes 35' Do; Prohibitive 8'35' Don't do.

বিদ্যা To come; Present Root বিদ্যা; Imperative Root বিদ্যা Come; Prohibitive মার্মিন Don't come.

In the case of Double Imperatives, the two Roots are united by

Examples:-

र्तुचा.पा.हैश.चीचा।

Come and see. (John i. 39.)

In the Colloquial, if one is using the different Roots properly, the true Imperative Root, or, if none, then the Present Root, is adopted for the Imperative, as in Literary Tibetan.

EXAMPLES :-

ট্রি'ল্টীম'র'র বিন্দানা (for ম') ব্রিম। Take charge of this horse.

म्राह्मेर्यानुर्।

Don't forget.

Or, if the Colloquial has a special Root of its own, it may be used Examples:—

দ্দের্দ্বিশ্বান্ত্রির্ব্ব, or elegantly ন্ত্রীষ্ঠা,

or vulgarly ত্রীষা।

Take charge of this horse.

But if, as may often be done, one is using the Perfect Root for all moods and tenses, then that Root is also used for the Imperative, with or without 37, 37, or 371

If this latter Imperative sign is used at all, the Colloquial usually adopts the form  $\Im \eta$ !

रेना, however, is only used in the case of stern or urgent orders or injunctions, or when talking to coolies and the like.

The Colloquial equivalents for ব্রিশ্বাধান্ত্রি, ব্রিশ্বাধান্ত্রে, and থেছি are ইনাধান্ত্রি, ইনাধান্ত্রে, and থে।

5 is also largely used in the Colloquial instead of উসা, and has a softening effect.

The following are some of the commoner Colloquial Imperatives and Prohibitives:—

Imperative. Infinitive. र्शेट. or मैंग. Go. ব্লানি To go. 35'4' To do. র্থম' or ব্রিম' or ব্রীম' Do. WIT or ZIT To come. র্না Come. ८ मिर स्ट्रिंग or ८ मिर में दिन्देर रेविंग or दिन्दर वेंगि Bring. To bring (in hand). বহুদেবা (মাইদেবা ) To send. र्शेट or मार्डिट (उँमा) Send. त्रुमाश (क्षेमा) Pour. विनाया (विनाया) To pour. ্ট্রিম' (প্রিমা') Put down. র্মুম'ন' To lay or put down.

Negative.

지구희 Don't go.
지구희 Don't do.
지경도 Don't come.
지원자자 WE or 자고도 Don't come.
지원자자 WE Don't bring.
지구하고 or 자고도 Don't send.
지원자 Or 자고롱지 Don't pour.
지종지 or 자고롱지 Don't put down.

As a matter of fact, in these matters there is no rule save custom; for, according as a man is more or less educated, so he will mix up in his speech literary with vulgar forms, and the only way to learn is to keep one's ears open and observe what the prevailing custom is amongst different classes of Tibetans; for some will prefer to use the roots properly, while others, knowing little or nothing of them, will adopt the sound of the perfect root. So far as speaking is concerned, it will not much matter which method is adopted, unless of course one is talking to a cultured Tibetan; but, when writing in Tibetan, the roots should be used properly, and the usage with the perfect root discarded.

### VI.—THE PASSIVE VOICE.

In Literary Tibetan, as a rule, the subject of a transitive active verb, or of a causative verb, is put in the agentive case, and the subject of a neuter or of a passive verb is put in the nominative or the accusative (objective) case When, however, the active verb is intransitive, the subject is put in the nominative case. Moreover, when the subject, even of a transitive verb, is a pronoun emphatically used (as, for instance, with the particle annexed to it), the subject is put in the nominative case. Further, when the subject is obviously the agent or instrument, as, for example, when the postposition are is expressly used with the objective, then it is not necessary, though quite allowable, for the subject to be put in the agentive case; in other words, it may appear in the nominative case.

EXAMPLES:-

ম্বালী মান্ত্রমার্থার বিদ্যালয় বিদ

But what is a Passive Verb in Tibetan? How does the construction of the Passive Voice differ from that of the Active Voice? In a sense every Tibetan sentence, even when the verb is what we call Active, is permeated with the Passive idea. For, even such a sentence as \(\mathbb{A}\)\(\mathbb{T}\)\(\mathbb{T}\)\(\mathbb{N}\)\

verb is in the nominative or objective case, the Passive Voice is intended, unless some other structural peculiarity in the sentence indicates otherwise.

The same remarks hold as regards the Colloquial. The subject in the agentive case indicates the Active Voice; the subject in the objective (with or without A) indicates the Passive Voice. As a matter of fact, the Tibetan language strongly favours the agentive construction; and therefore the Passive Voice, or what passes as such, should be avoided as much as possible.

The Infinitive of the Passive Voice is, in Literary Tibetan, the same as the Participle Future of the Active Verb, i.e. the Future Root with the particle, e.g. 57 To be done.

In the Colloquial it is the Root with  $\overline{\mathfrak{J}}$ , or  $\overline{\mathfrak{I}}$  added. These, however, may also be used in Literary Tibetan.

# VII.—COMPOUND VERBS.

In Literary Tibetan these are of several kinds.

(a) A Substantive combined with an Active Verb.

# EXAMPLE:-

3×3,55,51 To make a mistake, or commit a fault, i.e. to err. In such cases the Substantive remains constant, and \$5,51 is conjugated regularly as an Active 4-Rooted verb; Present Root \$5,65, Perfect \$5,65, Future \$5,65, Imperative \$5,65,

(b) An Adjective in the Terminative case with  $\mathbf{x}$  combined with an Active Verb.

#### EXAMPLE:-

Terminative case remains constant, and the Active Verb is conjugated regularly, or according to its nature with reference to the Roots it possesses.

(c) A Principal Verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive with 5° combined with an Active Auxiliary Verb.

EXAMPLES:-

To permit to send.

To awake; To rouse.

In such cases the Principal Verb so formed remains constant, and the auxiliary is conjugated according to its nature.

(d) The Root of a Principal Verb put in the Terminative case with  $5^{\circ}5^{\circ}5^{\circ}5^{\circ}$  or  $5^{\circ}$ , agreeably to the final letter of the Root, combined with a Causative Verb.

EXAMPLE :-

To bid to do.

In such cases the Principal Verb so formed remains constant, and the Causative is conjugated according to its nature.

(e) The Present, Perfect, or Future Infinitive of a Principal Verb put in the Instrumental case and followed by the Root of an auxiliary.

Examples:

दश'मोर्ट्रिट'नश'र्केम।

I am allowed to send.

মে'নগ্ম'ন্থ'র ন্যানগ্রন্

I was allowed to send.

হয়'য়ৢৢৢঢ়৻য়য়'ঌৄয়।

I shall be allowed to send.

Or, Present Infinitive of Principal Verb in Instrumental case, declining the auxiliary regularly in  $\widetilde{\Xi}_{5}^{*}$ 

Examples:-

नार्नेट नशक्ता मा जिन्।

I am allowed to send.

मर्हिट मशक्ति। या ध्येष्

I was ,, ,, ,,

मोर्ट्रतशः क्रेम् यर त्युरः or युद्रे।

 $I \ shall \ be \ ,, \quad ,, \quad ,,$ 

Here the auxiliary alone is conjugated.

(f) A Principal Verb (itself consisting of the Root of one verb added to the Root of another) combined with an Active Verb. Example—not very idiomatic, but merely adduced by way of illustration:—

दम्रात्तुमानुर्

To stroll about.

Here the two Roots remain constant, and the Active Verb is conjugated according to its nature.

(g) A Principal Verb (itself consisting of two Roots as above, combined with the Root of an Active Verb in the Terminative case with 5, 5 etc.), combined with a Causative Verb.

EXAMPLE:-

त्म<u>े</u> त्रुमा चे र रु तहमाय।

To cause to stroll about.

Here all except the Causative remains constant, and the Causative is conjugated according to its nature.

In the Colloquial the Infinitive and the Root of a verb are never put in the Terminative case as they are in Literary Tibetan.

Moreover, the Infinitive may represent the Substantive or Noun as well as the Verb.

Hence, when the Infinitive, in form, is combined with an auxiliary verb, it may be regarded either as a Substantive or as a Verb.

However regarded, the tendency of Colloquial Tibetan, when a Substantive or a Verb is combined with an auxiliary verb, is to drop the Infinitive form of the verb, or the full form of the Substantive, and to use only the Root, though this is not always done.

For instance the Literary 되고' (う') 처리고' To arrange or prepare (literally To place in rows) is used Colloquially with う기다, thus:—되지' (or even 되') 출퇴기 한다.

When, however, To have, is the auxiliary, what looks like

a formal Infinitive is obviously a Substantive, e.g. 355 in 355 in 355.

To have a, or the, wish or desire, i.e. to wish or desire.

In short, the tendency to use the Root of the Principal Verb, or of the Substantive, holds, whether the auxiliary is an Active or a Causative Verb, though not where it is a verb like \(\tilde{\mathbb{N}}\)5'\(\tilde{\mathbb{N}}\)1' To have.

The ordinary Colloquial Honorific auxiliary verb is 🍯 To be pleased, good enough, so kind as. It is combined either with Infinitives, or Roots followed by 🐧, or bare Roots.

EXAMPLES :-

ব্ৰুমান (for ন') নাৰ্দ্বে | To give. ঠুন বৃক্তিন ক্ৰু নাৰ্দ্বে | To return, or come or go back. মুনাঝাৰ্দ্বি নাৰ্দ্বে | To desire.

VIII.—In Literary Tibetan VERBS OF BECOMING, GROWING, CHANGING, TURNING, GETTING, and the like, are often expressed with the aid of the auxiliaries ANTIO become, etc. or ANTIO To go, the latter being the more modern. The noun or adjective governed by such auxiliary is put in the Terminative case, e.g. ANTIO or ANTIO To become a Lama; ANTIO TO GETTICH. But sometimes the Literary Tibetan has in these cases a special verb, e.g. ANTIO TO grow old.

The Colloquial, when it does not have a special verb, uses and does not put the noun or adjective in the Terminative case.

EXAMPLE:-

युना रा दिना न To get rich; but क्षाय To grow old.

IX.—INCEPTION is expressed in Literary Tibetan with the aid of the verb 역동계환기 or 클래티 (Perfect Root 지정계환 or 클래티 Future Root 제공계환 Imperative Root 클래티 or 클래티 ) To begin. It is used

with or without the prefixed word ATT When used as an auxiliary the construction is that described under Compound Verbs, No. VII.

The Colloquial equivalent is (저희) 지장되고 To begin, which when used as an auxiliary, may be combined either with the Infinitive or the Root (generally the Root) of the Principal Verb.

Inception may also be expressed by the verb next noticed.

X.—Imminence is expressed in Literary Tibetan (amongst other ways) by the verb ㅋㅋボン To be about to, To be on the point of, To be just going to. When used as an auxiliary the Principal Verb is generally put in the Terminative case of the Infinitive.

Example:—

टश.पर्चे.चर.च|चश्र.त.जश ।

I was about to write; or as I was about to write. (Rev. x. 4.)

In the Colloquial the same idea is expressed by means of the auxiliary verb  $\widetilde{A}_{1}$   $\widetilde{A}_{2}$   $\widetilde{A}_{3}$   $\widetilde{A}_{4}$   $\widetilde{A}_{5}$   $\widetilde{A}_{5}$ 

Examples:-

दशःभैःनोःदश्चःदन्त्रःभिन्। दशःभैःनोःदश्चःदन्त्रःभिन्ःदाःभित्। प्राःश्चःदशःभैःनोःदश्चःदन्त्रःभिन्।

I am just about to write.

I was just about to write.

 $Yesterday\,I\,\,was\,\,just\,\,about\,\,to\,\,write.$ 

XI.—In Literary Tibetan VERBAL CONTINUATIVES are expressed with the aid of some adverb like 회장, or 카지, Always, Continually, Perpetually, or of a phrase like 회장, 조각, Without ceasing.

Examples:-

बिंदः मीश हमा हुं (or क्युंव हुं ) देते । हमा हुं दमादः यर स्युंद रहेमा। क्युंव कदः शेदः यर क्लेंब यश वेंच रहेमा।

He hopes on, keeps on hoping, hopes continually.

Go on rejoicing; Rejoice always. (1 Thess. v. 17.)

Pray on; keep on praying; Pray without ceasing. (1 Thess. v. 18.)

Colloquially they are formed by repeating the Root of the verb, with  $\widehat{A}$ ,  $\widehat{A}$ , or  $\widehat{A}$  added to each Root, and combining the whole with  $\widehat{A}$ ,  $\widehat{A}$  To do, as an auxiliary.

EXAMPLES :-

दश्र अभी अभी जी प्रेंपिट or जी प्रेंपिट Go on reading this book.
or मुक्षा)

XII.—FINALITY OR COMPLETE ACCOMPLISHMENT.

In earlier Literature this is expressed by putting the verb in the Terminative case of the Infinitive with  $\overline{5}$ , and adding  $\overline{5}$ , the Root of  $\overline{5}$ , To be finished, and then conjugating regularly.

In later Literature the same construction is adopted, but, instead of  $\exists \xi$ , use is made of  $\xi \xi$ . Perfect Root of  $\xi \xi \xi \xi$ . To be completed, terminated, finished, with or without the preceding adverb  $\xi \xi \xi \xi$ . Wholly, Entirely.

The Colloquial custom is simply to add 5? to the Root of the verb, and then conjugate regularly.

EXAMPLES:-

 दश'न्यो'क'वन्ने' मूर्गिना'कंन्यने' श्रेंदि' ।

 दश'न्यो'क'वन्ने' नमूना'कंन्यों

 दश'न्यो'क'वन्ने' नमूना'कंन्यों

I am reading this book right through.

I have read this book right through.

I shall read this book right through.

In Literary Tibetan द्वित्रंदा is combined with the Infinitive of the

Principal Verb put in the Terminative case with  $\overline{\zeta}$ , e.g.  $\zeta$   $\overline{\zeta}$   $\overline{\zeta}$ 

When \( \sqrt{\overline{\gamma}} \sqrt{\overline{\gamma}}'\sqrt{\overline{\gamma}}'\sqrt{\overline{\gamma}}'\sqrt{\overline{\gamma}}'\ (which latter is never \( written \)) is used, the subject of course is put in the Dative case. Thus: in Literary Tibetan:—

८.ज.अर्रेट.चर.रेम्थ.श्र्री

I wish to see,

Or, in Colloquial:-

८'त्र'अर्घेट'न'न्नेंश।

Or :--

८.ज.शर्बेट.रेम्डिश.ग्री.जूरी

Or :--

I wish to see.

८ त्यासर्वेद द्वी वी व्यन

Or :--

দ'নার্থুদ'র্নু'বর্ণুণ

An Intensive form of  $3\overline{5}$ 7' is  $3\overline{5}$ 7' To long, to yearn, to crave.

EXAMPLE :-

८. इ. इ. मीट ज. प्रे. कीट पर्टेर।

I long to go to Darjeeling.

Instead of ব্র্লিব্রিন্টের I wish to go, another Literary form is ব্র্লিব্রিন্টের্নিস্টের I have a desire for going, i.e. to go.

XIV.—FREQUENTATIVES may be formed, not by repeating the Root of the Verb, but by the Periphrastic Present.

EXAMPLE:-

वित्र विस्नामा Do you often go to Court (i.e. Law Courts)?

Or the adverb সর্ক্রম্ম সর্ক্রম্ম Often, may be added. Thus:—

XV.—Use of the Perfect Root in the Colloquial.

When the Present Root of a Verb ends in an inherent 'N' (e.g. ষ্ট্রান To look), or in an inherent R' (e.g. মর্ত্রেন To bear, or bring forth), or in (e.g. §3. To request, to ask), or in (e.g. 3.7 To live, feed, nourish), that Present Root is generally used for the Present Indicative, the Future Indicative in भूष्पूर etc., the Present Participle, Periphrastic Present Participle, Present Infinitive, Supine and Verbal Noun. Of course, it is quite allowable, and even proper, both when speaking and writing, and especially when writing the Colloquial, to use the Roots that are assigned to particular moods and tenses for those moods and tenses. It is said, however, that as a matter of fact this is seldom or never done, at least in Vulgar Colloquial. It is also said that if, in the verbs above referred to, the -Future is formed with আঁচ for all persons, instead of with সাঁ আঁক etc., the Perfect Root should be used; and that for all other verbs the Colloquial usually adopts the Perfect Root, if any, for all moods and This is very doubtful, except perhaps in vulgar Colloquial. The idea, especially as connected with the Future Tense, probably arises from the fact that the Perfect Root often has the same, or nearly the same, sound as the Future Root. For instance, in the Verb \$\frac{1}{5}\subseteq T \tag{To send}, the Perfect Root \$\frac{1}{5}\subseteq \text{and the Future Root}\$ স্ত্র sound alike or nearly alike. In this case, the better course would be to use \$\frac{1}{5}\text{\text{\text{\$\infty}\$}}\text{ instead of \$\frac{5}{5}\text{\text{\$\text{\$\infty}\$}}\text{ for the Future in \$\text{\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\infty}\$}}\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\infty}\$}}\text{\$\text{\$\tex{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\text{\$\e best course would be to use the Roots properly, in all cases.

# CHAPTER III.

### SYNTAX.

§ 39.—Most of what the student will desire to know under this head has already been dealt with in Chapter II, ETYMOLOGY, in connection with each of the different parts of speech, but a brief résumé of the main rules will doubtless be appreciated.

1.—Every Tibetan sentence is ordered thus: Subject, Object, Predicate.

EXAMPLES:-

८४:५२:७:५२:ग्रॅम्मामी:स्र

I am reading this book.

្រ or ្រុង ត្រៀប ្រុង ក្សា ក្សា ក្សា ក្សា ក្សា ប្រាំ I want to go to Darjeeling.

र्थितः (or त्रज्ञाः क्षेटः तर्नेतः or त्रज्ञाः नतः तर्नेतः सम्पर्धतः )।

- 2.—As regards the component parts of the subject, or of the object, if the student thinks more or less backwards, he will get a very fair idea of the order in which they should be spoken or written. That order is as follows:—
  - (a) The principal substantive; unless it is qualified by an adjective in the genitive case, in which event the adjective comes first.
  - (b) The adjective when in any case other than the genitive.
  - (c) Participial clauses containing relative or correlative pronouns, and auxiliary to the principal substantive. These follow the rule of the adjective.
  - (d) The numeral, or the definite or indefinite article, and then the postposition.
  - 3.—Adverbs precede, and interrogative pronouns immediately precede, the verb which they qualify or with which they are connected.
  - 4.—As regards the predicate, the verb comes last, every extension of the predicate preceding it. As regards the verb itself, the principal

verb comes first, either in the shape of an infinitive in the terminative case, or of a simple infinitive, or of a root, and then comes the active, auxiliary, or causative verb, these last alone being conjugated with reference to mood and tense.

5.—The general aspect of a Tibetan sentence, particularly if long and complex, is a series of subordinate clauses in a state of suspense, winding up with a definite statement.

EXAMPLE :-

रे. वश मिट. मीश श्र. क्ष्मश दश्य मीडिमाश है। रे. ता. येवश वश चित्र मीश प्राप्त । हे. वश मिट. मीश वित्र येश हे. दमाय का क्ष्म मीडिमाश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश प्राप्त । क्ष्म मीडिमाश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश प्राप्त । क्ष्म मीडिमाश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश प्राप्त । क्ष्म मीडिमाश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश प्राप्त । क्ष्म मीडिमाश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश वश्य चित्र मीश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश वश्य चित्र मीश है। रे. ता. येवश वश्य चित्र मीश चित्र मीश वश्य चित्र मीश चित्र

And seeing the multitudes he went up into the mountain: and when he had sat down, his disciples came unto him: and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying.

But the literal Tibetan is:-

Then by him the crowds seeing, into the mountain having gone, having sat down, the disciples into his presence having come, by him mouth having opened, to them teaching was said.

# APPENDIX.

### CONJUGATIONS.

Note.—These are intended for ready reference; and, to economize space, pronouns have been omitted, except at the beginning. The plural is the same as the singular. They are not to be regarded as rigid, immutable expressions, but as forms which take on a moulding according to the structural necessities of the sentence.

I.—Colloquial \( \text{\text{\$\tilde{\text{V}}}} \)\( \text{To be present } ; \) To exist ; \( To \text{ be}. \)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present.

5:2

I am, or We are.

हिंदिस्पेदः or बहुना।

Thou art, or You are.

बिंसिंद or पर्वा or सिंद यारेद।

He or it is, or They are.

Or, with an Indefinite signification:—

To for all persons.

# Past.

Same as Present, context shewing Tense.

Or :-

८ स्पूर्य पूर्वा I was.

দ্র্ভিন্মন্থান্ত or occasionally অন্মন্ত্র or (rarely, chiefly interrogatively) অন্মন্থান্ত Thou wast.

मिर्फिर् यारेर or occasionally र्फिर्यायतुना or rarely र्फिर्याकी He was.

Imperfect: I was existing.
Perfect: I have existed.
Pluperfect: I had existed.

Same as Present, context shewing Tense; or same as above form of Past.

### Future.

Type for all persons: I shall exist.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If (so and so)....(then) I shall exist.

(Present Root).... for all persons.

Past: If .... I would exist.

(Perfect Root)....বু .... ইন্মেন্স and so on as in Past Tense, Indicative Mood.

Or :---

(Perfect Root)...., T. i. f. a. p. (= for all persons).

Perfect: If .... I would have existed.

(Perfect Root).... T. .... WT or .... JE or .... AJT f. a. p.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can exist.

ॲर्'ब्रुव' or ॲर्'ब्रुव'ऑट' f. a. p.

Or :—

र्भेर व्ययः गुः भेना

ब्रिन श्रुन गुरित्रुना (or देइ or rarely, chiefly interrogatively, बेर्न)।

ब्रिन मुन गुःरेन (or तन्ना or rarely धेन)!

Past: I could exist.

র্মির্'র্ব'র্মির' f. a. p.

Or:--

ऑर् व्याप्त । and so on, as in Past Indicative.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall exist; I may exist; It is likely, etc.

मार्डमा चुेदाब प्राप्ति । f. a. p.

Or :--

ऑर मी प्येद य त्र ] f. a. p.

Or :--

ऑर मी भेद में (or द्र्ये)। f. a. p.

Past: I might exist.

শ্রীণ ন্ত্রীণ মেন্দ্র আবা so on, as in Past Indicative.

Or:—

मिडमा होत्र स प्याप्त or प्रतृता। f. a p.

Or :-

भेर (or त्रुना) यास्त्रयात्र। f. a. p.

र्थें र (or त्रुमा) यथ्ये र में or त्रों । f a. p.

# HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must exist; I ought to exist.

र्षेर् र्नोश | f. a. p., or र्षेर् र्नोशर्थेट | f. a. p.

Or :--

অন্ন্ৰাজ্ঞান and so on, as in Indicative Present of Colloquial অন্ন!

Or vulgarly:-

चित्रं प्राप्त and so on, as next above.

Past: I ought to have existed.

चित्र'त्राह्म'त्र'य भेत्। and so on, as in Indicative Past.

Or :-

ॲर्'र्न्न्श'वुद'। f. a. p.

Or vulgarly:—

অঁহ হৃদ্য অধ্য and so on, as in Indicative Past, but with স instead of

### PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: That, or In order that, or So that I may or might exist.

चित्र प्रदे दिन मा f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Be; exist.

चुतः, or ऒ॔५'य'तुँब', or ऒ॔५'य'तुैब', or ऒ॔५'य'तुै५', or ऒ॔५'य'तुैब', or ऒ॔५'य'सिँ६। f. a. p.

If Attributive only, then JA', or JA' (Coll.), or J5' or JA', or AF5|

 Prohibitive: মার্বুল, or মা (য়র্মা) বুর, or মা (য়র্মা) ব্রুল,

 or মা (য়র্মা) মার্ব্ । f. a. p.

Note.— উনা, or ইনামান্ত্র, or ইনামান্ত্র, or ব্ল, or জা may be added according to rule.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me exist.

चित्रत्रम्। (with or without उँमा etc.) f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

I may exist; I am allowed to exist.

भेरिकेंग। f. a. p.

Or:--

थ्रेन् क्रमामी थ्रेन।

ॲर्-र्क्रेन्-मी-ॲर्- or पर्नेना

र्थेर केंबानी थेंर or त्रुमा or र्थेर सरेर।

(This last may be conjugated on, according to mood and tense.)

OPTATIVE.

Oh that I existed; Would that I existed.

२५ विना, or २५ मा f. a. p.

# PARTICIPLES.

Present: অঁহমা

Existing; Being.

Past:

র্থিই হা

Existed: Been.

Com. Perfect: অবিমাধীৰাম।

Having existed; having been.

Future: ऑट कुं, or ऑट क्री

About to exist or be.

# PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

অবি'মান্ব | Who or which exists or existed.

অঁহ'ম। Which exists or existed.

प्राः (or प्राः कुं) अनित्। Who is to, or will, exist.

ऑट मूं (or ऑट मूं) अव यह । Which is to, or will, exist.

ल्राम् (or ल्राम्) रे।

Ditto.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

Ψ̄¬་ಶོང་ | As, since, because, etc. .... exists, exist.

भेर्नायदे न्हाया

At the time of existing; when, while .... exists, exist.

 $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5,\overline{5}}$  In or by existing; if, when, .... exists, exist.

ই মা Existing.

মৃত্যুষ। Though, because existing.

चेरियदे रेंद्रया For existing.

# Past.

ळॅर्यश।

 $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ,  $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}_{5}}$ ,  $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$ ,  $\widetilde{\mathbb{$ 

ल्रिंदायाया ।

ଐ୍ରମ୍ଫ୍ରିଷ | Though, because .... existed.

VERBAL NOUNS.

र्पेर्यं, or र्पेर्यंरी

The existing.

SUPINES.

To exist; To be.

व्यदःयदेः द्वाय।

**भेर** मुदे देव था

व्यन्यदे देवता

For existing; For being.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

व्यद्भा

To exist : To be.

ळॅर्'य'भेक्'य।

To have existed; To have been.

ऑट मुं (or ऑट मुं) भेष्य। To be about to exist.

II.—LITERARY X5'T' To exist; To be present; To be.

(N.B.—The forms in A  $\exists x$  are only used when that verb is being used as a mere copula.)

INDICATIVE MOOD.,

Present: I exist; I am existing; I am present; I am.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

Or, elegantly but rather obsoletely:

८.পঞ্চুধা।

I exist.

हिनःमान्त्र।

Thou existest.

मिंद्र सकेश, or मादद, or सकेश या प्येत्। He exists.

Or respectfully :-

नद्याः ॲर।

हिर्स्त्र।

मिंदः निबुन्नासः, or सद्दः, or निबुन्नासः संभेत्।

N.B.—

ম্কিমামা is an elegant form for আঁত্মা

म्दियः ,, ,, ,, ,, ५५माय।

মন্ধ্য ,, ,, ,, ,, भेब्य।

মানের ,, a respectful ,, ,, আঁর মা

चित्रम्भाराः ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,, ,,

Past: I existed.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

Or :--

भेर् यर मुर्रेहें। f. a. p.

Or :-

آجَ آ f. a. p. I was....

Or :--

ম্বিম্মুর্মান্ত্র and so on, as in second form of Indicative Past of Literary মিব্মা

Or :--

गुर-य-भेव।

Ditto.

Imperfect: I was existing.

(Same as Present, context showing tense.)

Perfect: I have existed; Pluperfect: I had existed.

(Same as Past.)

Future: I shall exist.

ॲर्रायर दिमुर रि. a. p.

Or :--

तमुद्दि f. a. p. I shall be....

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If..... I shall exist.

(Present Root) " 5" (any Future form as above).

Past: If..... I would exist.

(Perfect Root) ত্র জের্ম্মর্থ and so on.

Or :--

৺ব ৺ ঐ বিশ্বমশ্রুম শ্রম্মীর। and so on.

Or :--

"નુ મુમ્યમેન | and so on. I would be...

Or :-

ं ब ें प्रेंप्यर गुर हैं। f. a. p.

Or :--

्र मुद्देशि f. a. p I would be....

Perfect: If....I would have existed.

(Perfect Root) "न् ऑर्, or "त्नुम, or "नुहा। f. a. p.

Or :--

ं जुः भेंद्रचर मुदःय भेंद्र। and so on.

Or :-

াব্ নুহ্মার্ম্ব and so on. I would have been.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can exist.

ইন্মেম্বুরার্জা f. a. p.

Past: I could exist.

ॲर'यर'**तु**श्चाय'र्थेत्।

র্থান্থ্র বুষান্থ্র । তা occasionally, chiefly interrogatively, ত্রি।

Perfect: I could have existed.

चित्रपत्र बुद्धाय चित्। and so on.

### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall exist: I may exist.

शु'.वेश' प्रेंद्'यर'त्मुर'रें । f. a. p.

Or :--

พีรามราฐิราริโ f. a. p.

Or :--

चित्र प्रस्तुमार्गे f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would exist: I might exist.

शुःभेश प्रिं पर मुर प्रांची and so on.

Or :-

ইন্মেন্ড্রিন্মেন্ড্রা and so on.

Or :-

য়ৣॱঀয়৺ ॲ५ॱয়য়য়ৣয়ৼৢ৾ঀ f. a. p.

Perfect: I would have existed: I might have existed.

शुः विश्वः प्रेन्यम् गुर्यः प्रेन्। and so on.

Or :-

चित्रपर श्रीत पार्चित्। and so on.

#### HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I must exist; I ought to exist.

र्षेर्'यर'र्नेश'र्से or सेर्'यर'तु | f. a. p.

 ${f Past}: I \ must \ have \ existed; \ ought \ to \ have \ existed.$ 

ইন্মেন্ন্নিম্মান্দ্রীৰ and so on.

### PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: In order that I may or might exist.

फॅर्'सर'त्जुर'वदे'सुर। f. a. p.

Or :-

ऑट मुँदे सुँद। f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

বৰুদার কিন্ or ঐত্বংঘর ন্মুর উনা। Exist.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me etc., exist.

ऍर्-पु-रुमा-रेमा or ऍर्-पर-रुमा-रेमा f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to exist.

स्त्रिं केंग्निं f. a. p.

Or :-

ঊ্ব্যুব্রু হিল্প f. a. p., or ঊ্ব্যুব্র ইন্স্ইন্

Past: I was allowed to exist.

ইন্মান্ত্রনামান্ত্র and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to exist.

ॲन्:यश्रः क्रॅम्। यन: द्युः र रें। f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I might exist.

Participles.

(Same as in Colloquial.)

Periphrastic Expressions:—

Same as in Colloquial. Also:-

थॅर-बुर-सम्बर् or थॅर-बुर-य-ये।

He who exists or existed.

ॲर्-वेर्-य।

That which exists or existed.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Present: Existing.

ळॅन्ने, ॲन्या, ॲन्याया, ॲन्याया, ॲन्याया, ऑन्याया, ऑय्याया, ऑय्या

Past: Having existed.

धॅर्-रे-, थॅर्-यश्, थॅर्-तश्न, थॅर्-यायश्न, थॅर्-यार्-। etc.

VERBAL NOUN.

ॲॅंर्य or ॲर्यरी।

Existing, To exist.

SUPINE.

ॲन्पर or ॲन्पू।

To exist.

Infinitives.

(As in Colloquial.) Also:—

ल्र्रायर.पंचीर.य।

To be about to exist.

N.B.— $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{2}}$  $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{1}}$  $\widetilde{W}_{\overline{1$ 

III.—Colloquial अद्भा To be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present.

ऋर.

I am.

ব্দুলা or occasionally ইন্, or rarely, chiefly interrogatively ইন্,

I was. Past:

I was being. Imperfect: Same as Present, context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have been. I had been. Pluperfect:

Future: I shall be.

Or :--

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If ... I shall be.

(Present Root with "" of followed by either of above Future forms.)

Past: If .... I would be.

(Perfect Root) ৺ব৺ব৺মীবা

Or :--

(Perfect Root) …ず…ズズ! f. a. p.

Perfect: If .... I would have been.

Or :-

(Perfect Root) তের তের প্রাপ্ত or তের্না or তের্না each f. a. p., save that  $\mathfrak{Z}^{\mathfrak{r}}$  is confined to 1st person.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be.

Past: I could be.

भेद प्रा f. a. p. context showing Tense.

Or :-

ਹੈਂਟ.ਬੋਹ| f. a. p.

Or :---

মীব্দ্ববাদীব। and so on.

### PROBABILITY.

Present and Past: I may or might be; Perhaps I shall or would be.
মান্ত্ৰা টুম্ন স্মান্ত্ৰ f. a. p.

Or '—

स्ति भी भीत्र या त्र । f. a. p.

Or :--

ऑट मी भेर में f. a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to be: I must be.

भेद'द्रमें हा f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been; must have been.

ম্বি'বৃশ্ব' বুল' for 1st person, others taking ব্রুদা।

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

In order that I may or might be.

भेन परे देन भ। f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

र्चेश, गुैश, तुेर, or तुंश।

Be.

मःनुर।

Do not be.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. be.

भेद'मद्भम'। f. a. p. with देम' or दूर or । ज र पार or रेमाश'में दे or र्

### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be.

भेद केंग। f. a. p.

Or :--

भेदः र्क्सा मा भेर् | and so on.

Past: I was allowed to be.

भेव केंग रेंदि । f. a. p.

Or :--

धीत केंग या धीत। and so on.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I were: Would that I were.

. भेद: वृंना or भेद:य: वृंना | f. a. p.

PARTICIPLES.

Present:

र्युव:य।

Being.

Past:

र्थेवय।

Been.

Com. Perfect:

ळॅर्या भेराय।

Having been.

Future:

लूट.मी. or लूट.मी.

About to be.

PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

भेदाया or भेदायादे।

Who or which is or was.

लूट.मी.शाय

ॲंट'र्गु'री

ऑट.मॉ्.शायव

ॲट मूं दे।

Who or which will be, or is or are

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

VERBAL NOUN.

• Supines.

ঊষ্মা

ঊষ্মা

৺ব্দ্যা

১ বিল্লা

Infinitives.

친국지 |To be.전국자 교육지 |To have been.전도 출 '권국지 |To be about to be.

N.B.— 짜하지 is only a copula, and may not be used for 짜 기기, but 짜기기 may be used for 짜하지!

Moreover, it must always be remembered that ����, whether Colloquial or Literary, is never used substantively, but always in connection with some noun, adjective, or substantive or auxiliary verb, into which its forms have to be moulded.

IV.—LITERARY भेर्द्रभ To be.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

 $\mathbf{Present}: I \ am.$ 

থাঁব (বি)। মুনুনা (নি) or occasionally, chiefly interrogatively, থাঁব। থাঁব (বি)।

Or, honorifically:—
(Not used: ordinary ઋੱਤ with བདག་ instead of ང་))

**অ**নাধ্য, (ब्रु.) or 'সনাধ্য, সেখ, (ब्रु.)। নাথ্যু। Past: I was.

Same as first Present form, context showing Tense.

Or :--

... य प्रेव (वे)।

ান্দ্ৰ্বি (মৃ) or occasionally, chiefly interrogatively অঁশ্

... याधीय (ब्रे)।

Imperfect: I was being. Same as first Present form, context showing Tense; or same

Perfect: I have been Pluperfect: I had been. as Past.

 $I\ shall\ be.$ Future:

 $\ldots$ चर.पंचीर.  $(
\widetilde{\chi})$ ।

... धर.४ <del>च</del>िंर. (र्<u>र</u>)।

...ग्रॅरप्रगुरः (र्रे)।

each f. a. p

CONDITIONAL AND SUBJUNCTIVE MOODS.

**Present**: If .... I shall be.

...व्...व्याप्तः (र्दे)| f. a. p. (Present Root)

Past: If  $\dots$  I would be.

''' ব''' শুম' ব'' पोद'' (वे ) | and so on. (Perfect Root)

Or:--

···বৃ''-শুম'র। f. a. p.

Perfect: If....I would have been.

্(Perfect Root) েবু ্নুম্ম্ম্র্ (বুঁ)। and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be.

শ্বির্প্র (র্নি) f. a. p.

Or :--

लेक्सर वृद्धः (र्ह्स)।

Past: I could be.

धेर मुन प्राधेर (र्ने)। and so on.

Or :--

धेद'यर'वुस'य'धेद' (वि)। and so on.

Perfect: I could have been.

धेन श्रुव पार्धेन (र्हे)। and so on.

Or :-

धेब्:यर बुझ य छेंद (र्हे) | and so on.

Or :--

भेदायुनाहोंदा (दें ) | f. a. p.

Or:

प्रेब. तर. वेश. वेर. (ट्र.) | f. a. b.

### PROBABILITY.

Present: I may be; Perhaps I shall be.

श्च-वेश ... चर (or ... चर or ... चॅर ) त्र्युर (र्रे) । f. a p.

Or :--

भेद'यर'शेंद' (र्हे)। f. a. p.

Or :-

भेदारादर्गा (में)। f. a. p.

Past: I might be; Perhaps I would be.

মু'ব্রম'''বম'(or '''বম''or ''' ব্রম্') गुप्त'यथेव (व्रे)। and so on

भेद यर श्रेर य भेद (दें) | and so on.

Perfect: I might have been; Perhaps I would have been.

ধ্র-প্রিম : : বম্ম (or : : यम or यम ) मुरायाभेत् (त्रि)। and so on.

Or :—

শ্বর্থর শ্বর্থর (র্বি) | and so on.

# HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present : I must be ; I ought to be.

Past: I must have been; I ought to have been.

भेद यर द्रमें इंग्रं य भेद (दें) | and so on.

Or :--

भेब्'यर'द्रमें श वुदः (देः)। f. a. p.

Or :-

धेन यम उत्ताय धेन (वे) | and so on.

Or :--

ঋষ্যার ক্রাহার ক্রাহার ক্রাহার কর তা.

# Purposive Mood.

In order that I may or might be.

$$\widetilde{\nabla}$$
  $\widetilde{\nabla}$   $\widetilde{\nabla}$ 

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. be.

भेद यर दुवा रेम्। f. a. p.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be.

भेद'यश'र्केमा (में)। f. a. p.

Or :-

र्भेर प्रशः केंग में भिंदः (र्हे)। and so on throughout.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Would that I were; Oh that I were

भेद:यर:गुर:हेम्। f. a. p.

VERBAL NOUN.

प्रेन्य or प्रेन्यने। Being; The being; To be.

SUPINE.

प्रेक्ट्सर or प्रेक्ट्र | Tr be.

PARTICIPLES.

Present: অব্যা Being. মব্যা Not being.

Past: তাঁর্মা Been. ধার্মা Not been.

Com. Perfect: অস্থান্ত Having been. রীস্থান্ত্রী Not having been.

Future: ĀĒĒ or ĀĒĀ | About hĀĀĒ or ĀĀĀĒĀ | Not about to be.

# PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS

धीदाया or धीदायादी or दे। लूट.मी.भाष्यदे. or थे। ऑट में अमिन दे or है। ...रनुषरे or है। ऑह कुरी or दे।

ऑर में रे or कै।

लुब.वश।

र्भेद यश ।

...रपुषरे or दे।

Who or which is or was.

Who will be, or is or are to be.

Which will be, or is or are to be.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

| र्भवः यदः के त्य। |                                                    |
|-------------------|----------------------------------------------------|
| धेर्यदे रुखः ।    | At the time of being; when, while, as am, is, are. |
| শ্ব-শ্ৰ-শ্ৰ।      |                                                    |
| भेन निमा          | Being: as, since, when, after, while am, is, are.  |
| শীব-ব।            | In or by being; if, when am, is, are.              |
| <b>ঐব</b> :অ।     | Being.                                             |
| সূৰ-শ্ৰীশ।        | Though, since, because am, is, are.                |
| শ্ব-শ্বন্ধ।       | Of or for being.                                   |
| Past.             |                                                    |

Having been; as, since, when, after ... was, were.

Because, since, when ... was, were.

지국 디지!

As ... was, were.

지국 디지티!

After, since, because, when .. was, were.

If, when ... was, were.

# Infinitives.

 백국지|
 To be.

 백국지학학자기
 To have been.

 백국자자리기
 To be about to be; going to be.

 배국자자리기기
 To be about to be; going to be.

V.— ¬¬¬ To have; To possess.

Same as Colloquial or Literary  $\widetilde{\mathbb{W}}_{5}$  To be present, To exist, save that it is conjugated with the subject in the Dative case with  $\mathbb{W}$ . Thus:—

# INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I have; I possess.

To me there is.

ভূরিমান্ন্না To thee there is.

मिन्याधिर or तर्म or धिर्धारीर। To him there is.

And so on throughout.

VI.—Active, Transitive, 4-rooted Colloquial verb.

মার্নি:ম To send.

### Roots.

Present: 455 Perfect: 455 Future: 455 Imperative: 45

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I send.

८श.चोर्टेट.।

हिंद्र-गुरुष्महेंद्र-।

म्रिश.मोर्टेट.।

Periphrastic Present: I am sending.

८शमिर्देटमी स्पर्

हिंद्राणुक्षामहिंद्रामी स्प्रीतः or बहुमा

विशामित्र मी र्थित or वर्मा or स्रिन्स रेत्।

N.B.—Pronouns are henceforth omitted, except where necessary to make the construction clear.

The construction is in the AGENTIVE, save where otherwise indicated.

Past: I sent.

**芍5**5、 f. a. p.

Or :-

नर्टान्य भेत्।

ব্দেরের্বা or occasionally ইন্ or rarely (interrogatively) থীবা

यहरमारे ,, ,, यहमा ,, ,, ,,

Or:

ਸ55 श्रेंट । f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was sending.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense; or সমূম্মার্থী and so on, as in Past.

Perfect: I have sent.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had sent.

Same as Past or Perfect.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentences:-

नर्दाः दशः व्या

वर्दान्त्र रेपेर्' or तरुमा

वर्ट ब्राफेर्- or वर्ग- or फेर्-यन्रेर।

Future: I shall send.

नॉर्नेट (or नाइट) थेटि। f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद्रमी भी

मोर्नेद:मी'युन्मा' or नेन or योगा

मोर्नेट्र मी रेर or तरुमा or अव।

Or :---

ग्राइट आरेड् । I am (or have) to send.

And so f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If.... I shall send.

Or :--

(Present Root) अन्तर्भेत्। and so on.

Past: If ... I would send.

(Perfect Root) ত্র্মান্ত সমূদ্র মানু and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) "즉" 제중도 (or 제동도) অ도기 f. a. p.

Perfect: If....I would have sent.

(Perfect Root) "ず"スラエスジズー and so on.

Or :-

(Perfect Root) "4" 75E WT or 75E 79 or 75E 9E 1 f. a. p.

except that  $\mathfrak{J}^{\kappa}$  is usually confined to the first person, and  $\mathfrak{L}^{\kappa}$  used with the others.

# POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can send; am able to send.

महिंद: श्रुम | f. a. p.

Or:--

मॉर्नेट:**ब्रु**य:ऑट:। f. a. p.

Or :---

নার্নি:প্রবাণ্ট্রী শ্রেম্বা and so on.

Past: I could send.

महिंद: **बुव:**य: प्रेव। and so on.

Perfect: I could have sent.

নার্দি: ধ্রুন'মার্মির | and so on.

Or :-

महिंद्र मुदाया दुन्। f. a. p.

# PROBABILITY,

Present: Perhaps I shall send; I may send; It is likely that I shall send.

শৃত্তিশৃত্তিবৃত্তি ... (Either form of Simple Future).

Or :—

मॉर्नेट मी प्रिन सात्र । f. a. p.

Or :—

मार्नेट मी फेंब द में | f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I should send; I might send.

শান্তিশ্-ন্ত্ৰ-শ্-ন্ত্ৰ-শ্ৰেষ্ট্ৰৰ and so on.

Or :—

Or :---

न्द्रान अंदु स त्द्र। f. a. p.

Or :--

न्द्राच स्थित द्रों। f. a. p.

Perfect: Perhaps I would have sent; I might have sent.

मार्जेमा नुरिन्द प्याप्त । and so on.

Or :--

**ส**รุณาพัฐานาดุรุ่ f. a. p.

Or :---

ব5েম-ঊর্বিন্র্রা f. a. p.

HORTATIVE MOOD

Present: I must send: I ought to send

... त्रामिंद्र द्वीस्। f. a. p.

Or :---

... अमिर्हिट **द**र्में इंग्लिंग के का.

Or :--

...ম'নাইন'ব্নীহা'নী'মীব। and so on.

Or vulgarly:-

··· अमिर्दिन्नों में जिर् and so on.

Also the following, sometimes used:

····ぬ'却5に'W'えて!

I am (or have) to send.

··· वानाइम् प्यादेत्।

Thou art (or hast) to send.

··· (वामान्द्र थारेत्।

He is (or has) to send.

Past: I must have sent; ought to have sent.

ं भाषानिहिंद निर्मेश यं ( or vulgarly निर्मेश प्रेम् and so on.

Or :---

··· अमिर्दिर देने हा चुट । f. a. p., except that चुट is usually confined to the 1st person, and दिन्न used with the others.

#### PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that I may send.

महिंद प्रदे हिंदा f. a. p.

Past: In order that I might send.

नर्ट नेदे देवा f. a. p.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD

र्शेट or महिंद | Send.

N.B.— বিশা (commonly but improperly উবা), or ইনাধান্ত্র, or ইনাধান্ত্র, or ত্রা, or ধ্রা, may be added according to rule.
মান্ত্রি or vulgarly মান্ত্রা Do not send.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. send.

च्छिन् मोर्टेट चङ्कमा (ड्रेमा )। च्छिन् मोर्टेट चङ्कमा (ड्रेमा )। ट्रिस्मोर्टेट चङ्कमा (ड्रेमा )।

N.B.—The construction here is, "By me (or thee or him) a sending permit"

# PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to send; I may send.

८श्र नार्देट केंग। f. a. p., or नार्देट केंग ना भेंद्र। and so on.

Past: I was allowed to send; I might send.

ম্মান্ট্র ক্রিলাখাত্মীর | and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to send.

दश'मिर्देट'र्केम्'र्थेट' | f. a. p.

Or:

दश्यां में क्या में भिरा and so on.

N.B.—Here the construction is: "A sending by me is allowed, or was allowed, or will be allowed."

The following is more Bookish:-

८श.मोर्टेट.चश.क्रेमा।

I may send.

मिंद्र गोश मोर्देर प्रशासिमा।

Thou mayest send.

मिर्शामिर्टर प्रशास्त्रम।

He may send.

# OPTATIVE MOOD.

**Present:** Oh that I, etc. were sending, or might send.

दशमिंदि: वेना or दशमोंदि यः वेना।

Or, better:

दशमार्टेट व केमायाखा

Past: Oh that I, etc. had sent.

दश: नर्ट: वेमा or नर्ट: न: वेम।

Or, better:-

दश्यन्दर:व.कुन्।ताल।

# PARTICIPLES.

Present:

यहर्मा

Sending.

Perfect:

225.4

Sent.

Com. Perfect : สุรุธานัส เม

Having sent.

Future:

महिंद कुं or महिंद कुं भेद म। )
महिंद कुं or महिंद कुं भेद म। )
About to send.

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC.

नार्नेट्रास्त्र or नार्नेट्रानार्ने or नार्नेट्रानार्ने He who sends.

यर्टासम्बर or यर्टायारी।

He who sent.

Or the following constructions may be used :-

See regarding Active and Periphrastic Participles generally,  $\S$  38, V. D.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

#### Present.

| मिर्हे: स्वे। | Sending.                                     |  |
|---------------|----------------------------------------------|--|
| मिर्देट: यश   | Sending; Because, since, when, whilesending. |  |
| गर्नेट्र थ।   | Sending; at, for, though sending.            |  |
| गर्नेट्र मीश। | Though, $becausesending.$                    |  |
| महिंद्याय।    | As, since sending.                           |  |

महिंदः महिंदः त्या। महिंदः दा

Whilst sending.

If, when, though..send, sending. etc., etc.

# Past.

यर्ट. यही। यर्ट. यहा

리5다.학회 | 리5다.학회 |

यर्ट.चीश।

755.41

אקביםיתן

בלבים לבין

वर्टावायशा -

Having sent.

Sent; because, since, when . . sent.

 $\left\langle Having\ sent. \right\rangle$ 

Because, though ... sent.

If, when, though...sent.

 $igg| As, since, because, having \dots sent.$ 

etc., etc.

SUPINES.

महिंद्य। महिंद्या महिंद्या

गर्देर'थ।

महिंद्र-मदे देव त।

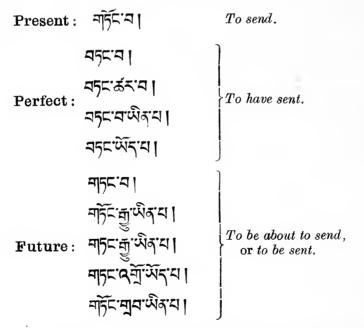
गर्नेट:कुरै:र्नेज्य। गर्नेट:सर्वे:र्नेनःस। For sending.

To send.

#### VERBAL NOUNS.

| मोर्नेट म।<br>मोर्नेट म: ने।<br>मोर्नेट म।                           | $\left. \left. \left. \right. \right. \right. \right\}$ Sending; the sending; a sending. |  |  |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|--|
| न5ट.च।<br>न5ट.च.ट्रो                                                 | $\left. \left. \left. \right. \right\} The\ having\ sent.  ight.$                        |  |  |
| नार्नेट सुं।<br>नार्नेट सुं।<br>नार्नेट सुं: ने।<br>नार्नेट सुं: ने। | $igg\} The \ being \ about \ to \ send.$                                                 |  |  |

# Infinitives.



VII.—Active, Transitive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb 7557

Roots.

Present: निर्दे! Perfect: निर्दे! Future: निर्दे!

Imperative: ब्रेंट or महिंद किया।

N.B.—Pronouns are omitted, but the construction is in the AGENTIVE, save where otherwise indicated.

The NTTY or placed over the reduplicated final consonant, or final vowel of a verb, is also omitted.

INDICATIVE MOOD,

Present: I send.

निर्दि! f. a. p.

Or, Intensively:-

मॉर्नेट:यर:बुर्। f. a. p.

Periphrastically:—

দার্ন্ নীর র্মন্।

দার্ন্ নীর র্মন্ তা ব্রুদা।

দার্ন নীর র্মন্ তা ব্রুদা or মার্ন নার্ন স্থান বার্ন নার্ন নার্

Elegant but obsolete form :--

महिंदः निव्यक्षिया

महिंद्रमिष्ठ मान्त्र।

मिट्ट मिलेर सकेश or मिट्ट or सकेश या और।

Or :---

Same, substituting at for Aaj

Or, Respectfully:—

विदानांनिंदिःनीकः स्प्रि ।

विदानांनिंदःनीकः स्परि ।

म्रिट्-मोर्टेट-मोर्थ-मार्खेनाश. or श्राटंत. or चर्विनाश.त.राजूरी

Past: I sent.

755' f. a. p.

Or :--

नर्द्रमार्थेद ।

ন্দ্ৰের্ম্ or occasionally and chiefly interrogatively ইব।

コラニコ・ツず

Or :--

קקביאוֹבין f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was sending.

Same as Periphrastic Present, the context showing Tense.

Or :--

সহত্র আঁব। and so on, as in Past.

Or :-

न्द्राचिद्रभेत्रमाधित्। f. a. p.

Perfect: I have sent.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had sent.

Same as Past, or :-

न5८:ॲ५।

नर्ट सें or दर्म।

न्द्रम् वर स्तुम् वर स्त्रिःसःसे**र्।** 

Also, but seldom used, and only at end of sentences:-

नर्दाःब्रह्मः व्याद्धित्।

वर्द्धाः व्याप्ति or त्रुम्।

नन्दः बुक्षाः वेदः or व्रद्मा or वेदः दाः देद।

Future: I shall send.

775Г! f. a. p.

Or :--

मिट्टें पर त्युर | f. a. p.

Or :-

नाइट ॲंट | f. a. p.

And note the following:-

I am (or have) to send.

नार्रम् तर्ना or interrogatively अँत्। Thou art (or hast) to send.

मार्टा कुं 'श्रेब ।

He is (or has) to send.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

**Present**: If...I shall send.

(Present Root) "" (any of the above Future forms), f. a. p.

Past: If... I would send.

Same as Present, save that in the Introductory Clause the Perfect Root is used: or:—

(Perfect Root) ত্রেন্স্ন্র্র্বা and so on.

Perfect: If. . I would have sent.

Same as Past.

Or :--

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can send.

मार्नेट श्रुम | f. a. p.

Or:—

मॉर्नेट.चर.वैश्रा f. a. p.

Or :--

मिर्नेट बुन स्पेट | f. a. p.

 $\mathbf{Past}: |I \ could \ send.$ 

मॉर्नेट चुन श्रेट । f. a. p.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट'यर'वृक्ष'र्शेट'। f. a. p.

Or :--

নার্নি: ধ্বন:মান্ধ্র | and so on.

Or :---

महिंद मर बुश या भेव। and so on.

Perfect: I could have sent.

महिंद्रमुदायाः भेर् | and so on.

Or :--

महिंदानः तुरुषायः भेदि | and so on.

# PROBABILITY.

Present: I may send; Perhaps I shall send.

शु-वेश प्रनाहर । f. a. p., or महिंद स्प्रेट । f. a. p.

Or :---

शुः वेश ः नोर्ट्र : पर : त्र मुर | f. a. p.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट पर शेर् | f. a. p.

Or :-

मॉर्नेट रीत्। f. a. p.

Past: I might send.

मार्नेट सेन या भेद। and so on.

Or :---

As in Past Tense, Potential Mood.

Perfect: I might have sent.

मॉर्नेट घुन श्रेट । f. a. p.

Or :--

महिंद्र बुन या थिंद्। and so on.

Or :=

मिर्देर श्रेर संभेद। and so on.

#### HORTATIVE.

Present: I ought to send: I must send.

··· यामिर्दे प्राप्त मिर्ट र्गेश f. a. p.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट'यर'मुदे । f. a. p.

Or :--

না5 মন্ত্ৰী কোৰ।

I am (or have)

नाइट मुंदि न् or interrogatively भेदा Thou art (or hast)

मार्टि: मुँ जूरी

He is (or has)

 ${f Past}: I \ ought \ to \ have \ sent.$ 

শ্ৰেন্ বৃদ্ধি। ব্যামীর | and so on.

# PURPOSIVE MOOD.

So that I may send, or might send.

मोर्नेदःसदै देव द्वा मोर्नेदःसदै देव स्था मोर्नेदःसदै देव स्था

Each f. a. p

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. send.

मार्टेट.चर.कैंगा. or मोबट.।

Or :--

मोर्टेट.टे.किमा. or मोर्थट.।

#### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to send: I may send.

নার্টিনেখা হুট্রা f. a. p.

Or :--

मार्नेदः यश केंगा मी खेर्। and so on.

Past: I was allowed to send: I might send.

महिंदि प्रशास्त्रिम् या भेतृ | and so on.

Or :=

मॉर्नेट'यश'र्केम्'य'र्थेर् | and so on.

Future: I shall be allowed to send.

नार्टानशः केन्।

Or :--

निर्दे नशकें निष्य र त्युर। f. a. p.

Or:-

मॉर्नेट नशकेंग सर नु । f. a. p.

#### OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that I, etc. were sending, or might send.

मॉर्नेट'ब'रें'अ'र्नुट'। f. a. p.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट तर विमा रिमा f. a. p.

Past: Oh that I, etc. had sent.

नॉर्नेट नर मुंद क्षर । f. a. p.

Or :---

पर्दर पर विमारीमा f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

वृद्धः । वृद्धः ।

Send.

म्रामिट्ट (ब्रिम्)। Do not send. ... भार्तेर वर भेर्नेश।

N.B.— শ্ৰীনা is not used with বৃনী খা

# PARTICIPLES.

गर्देर्य। Present:

Sending.

7557

コラニズボ・コー

Perfect:

Sent. コラニ きょい!

725.5/2.21

Com. Perfect: न्द्राम्भेदाय।

Having sent.

यर्टियर त्यार व

महिंद्र यर यु य

Future:

मार्डे- या

महेंद्र पर मा∃श्राय।

About to send.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

मार्टेट आयन

मार्रेट नेर आयन्।

गर्देर'य'र्ये।

महिंद्र होत्य।

मर्देर नेर यार्थ।

지5도···· 제지4 1

He who sends; the sender; the sending person.

He who sent. The sent.

Or the following simple construction may be used :-

See generally, § 38, V. D.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS. As in Colloquial.

VERBAL NOUN, OR ADJECTIVE.

SUPINES.



INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present: निर्देश To send. 755.71 **コケになべい** To have sent. বহুহ:ব:শ্रेद:य। Past: **コ5**にコ:当み:41 제5C'지 1 महिंद्र यर नु न गर्देर य। To be about to send; to be sent. महिंद्र-घर-माञ्चर्याः । Future: चर्टि: वर त्युर व। मोर्टेट मुं थेरा ।

VIII.—Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb नाइट'न, नाइट'नुं, नाइट'नुं, नाइट'नुं, जाइट'नुं। To be sent.

# Roots.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Objective or Accusative case, with or without lpha

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am being sent. নার্নিন্মা অব্

मार्<u>ट</u> मो स्ट्रिंग or पर्नुगा

मोर्नेट मी र्थिन or तनुमा or स्पेन सारेन।

Past: I was sent.

यरदायाः श्रेष्

यहर य पहुना or occ. देह or interr. भेना

বন্দ বন্দ্ৰ or বনুদা or rarely ঋষা

Or :--

755° ÑE' | f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was being sent.

Same as Present, but with adverb or other context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have been sent.

বহু নেই । and so on.

Or, same as Past.

Or the following, though seldom used save at end of sentence:

755.55.75.1 and so on.

Pluperfect: I had been sent.

Same as Perfect.

Future: I shall be sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If..I shall be sent.

Past: If..I would be sent.

Perfect: If..I would have been sent.

As in Active Verb No. VI.

POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can be sent.

Past: I could be sent.

Perfect: I could have been sent.

- As in Active Verb No. VI.

PROBABILITY.

#### HORTATIVE MOOD.

**Present**: I ought to be sent; I must be sent.

वर्दः द्वीं शंगुः भेर्। and so on.

Or:-

यहदःद्रमें शंगी भीद। and so on.

Or :--

यहदर्भेश। f. a. p.

Or :---

न्दर्भेशःभेरः। f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been sent.

यहदः हर्नेश्याधीत्। and so on.

Or :-

ব5 দেব নি মানু হ' | and so on.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that I may be sent.

Past: In order that I migation t.

As in Active Verb

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

नात-खना। नार्देर-य-द्वेद्र। .यद्रम्प्य-देद्र। स्य-नार्देर-य-वेद्र।

Be sent.

Do not be sent.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

ন্ত্ৰ (or বহুণ) বস্তুন। Let me, etc., be sent.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to be sent.

गोर्डेट' (or यहर') द्विंग'मी'भेर। and so on

And so on conjugating 34 regularly.

Or :--

महिंद (or नहंद) देन। f. a. p.

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that I were being sent.

महिंद (य') जैना। f. a. p.

Or, better:-

मिर्नेद के के निष्या है। व. p.

Past: Oh that I had been sent.

ਸਤਵ (ਸ) (ਰੱਸ) f. a. p.

Or, better:

বহুদের ক্রিল্যান্ডা f. a. p.

# PARTICIPLES.

गर्देर:य। Present:

Being sent.

Past:

752.71

 $Been\ sent.$ 

Com. Perfect : กรุ เมื่อ สามา Having been sent.

Future:

নির্দ্র | About to be sent.

#### PERIPHRASTIC.

22C. 21/24 |  $\left\langle He\ who\ is\ {
m or}\ was\ sent. \right.$ 225.2.21

नारट:श्राम्ब

He who will be sent.

Or the following simple construction may be used :-

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

| नर्ट है।   | Being sent, having been sent.                                        |
|------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 47E.4%     | Because, since, whenwas or were sent.                                |
| 755.481    |                                                                      |
| ۵۶۲.۵.۵۱۱  | $\left. \left. \left.  ight.  ight.  ight. Having been sent.  ight.$ |
| 755°41     | If, when, thoughwas or were                                          |
| 755.2.4    | sent.                                                                |
| 45E.4.2E.1 | As, since, becausewas or were sent; having been sent.                |
| 75C.7.481  | sem, naving veen sem.                                                |
| न5⊏नी्थ    | Because, thoughwas or were $sent.$                                   |
|            |                                                                      |

SUPINES.

제주도: 편 | To be sent.

제주도: 편 | To be sent.

제주도: 편 | For being sent.

VERBAL NOUNS.

455.4.31

नर्टान स्वरंग रे।

मॉर्नेट कु रे।

मार्ग्स् है।

The being sent.

The having been sent.

The being about to be sent.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

चर्हिट कुं क्षेत्र य।

নাহন ক্রু অব মা

यर्टः मुं क्षेत्रय।

The same or :—

To be sent.

To be about to be sent.

IX.—Active, one-rooted Colloquial Verb राष्ट्रीय। To see.

Root throughout মূর্

N.B.—The construction is in the AGENTIVE, except where otherwise indicated.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I see.

हार्चेट | f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am seeing.

शर्वेट.ची.लूरी

अर्बेट:मी: ऑर् or परुमा।

अर्बेट मी र्षेर or तरुम or र्षेर सन्देर।

Past: I saw.

মর্ই:'রু:' \* or মর্ই:'র্ই:' f. a. p.

\* N.B.—35° for first person, 357° for the others.

Or ;—

भट्ट-न-लुब।

মার্থিনির্বা or occ. বিদ্ or rarely, chiefly interr. মার্

अर्बेट-व-रेदः ,, दर्गाः ,, ध्रेषाः

Imperfect: I was seeing.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have seen.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had seen.

Same as Past or Perfect.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentence:-

মার্থীন ৰুষা আঁবু | and so on.

Future: I shall see.

सर्बेट ऑट | f. a. p.

Or :--

अर्बेट में भेर | and so on.

Note also the following:-

মর্মিন্ত্র শেব। I am (or have) to see.

And so on.

Also:--

মার্থিমে ইবৃ । I am (or have) to see.

And so f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If.. I shall see.

(Present Root) ত্র্ ক্রম্মির মার্কির and so on.

Or :---

(Present Root) ত্রান্ত্রিউনি f. a. p.

Past: If.. I would see.

(Perfect Root) " द्राज्य प्राच्या f. a. p.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) ত্রান্ত্রা স্থার | and so on.

Perfect: If. . I would have seen.

(Perfect Root) তেওঁ সাই বি স্থিত। and so on.

Or :--

(Perfect Root) শ্রামার্নিনার্না f. a. p.

#### POTENTIAL MOOD.

Similar to construction in AFET To send, No. VI.

## PROBABILITY.

 $\textbf{Present}: \ \textit{Perhaps I shall see}: \textit{I may see}.$ 

Same as in  $\sqrt{5}$  \(\tau\) To send, No. VI.

Past: Perhaps I would see: I might see.

सर्वेदः नाय्येदः याद्य | f. a. p.

Or :--

মর্থ্যামের মুর্না f. a. p.

Or :--

मार्डमा नुपार कार्येट स्ट्रा f. a. p.

Or :--

मार्डमा नु देन अर्चेट मार्थ । f. a. p.

Or :--

Perfect: Perhaps I would or might have seen.

सर्वेदःयः भेर् प्राप्त् f. a. p.

Or ·—

মার্থিনে স্মার্থিন মার্থিন ম

Or :---

#### HORTATIVE.

Present : I ought to see : I must see.
েম'মার্লি-ব্রামাণ্টা অব | and so on.

Or :-

মে'মার্থমি'নী'মার | and so on.

Or :--

··· ম'মর্থিচ'বৃদ্ধি'অন'। f. a. p.

Or :-

পর্টু নূর্ট পুর।

I am (or have) to see.

And so on.

Or :--

मर्बेट थारे ।

I am (or have) to see.

And so, f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have seen; must have seen.

द'त्र'अर्थेद द्वींश'य'भेद | and so on.

Or :--

...মাস্ত্রিমানুমানু f. a. p. But see note re বুদা on p. 354.

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: In order that I may or might see.

মর্থিমেদ্র বিশ্বা f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

পর্টু ( (ब्रेग)।

See.

मामह्यः (धुना)।

Do not see.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

शर्वेट.चढिचा. (वृचा)।

Let me, etc. see.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to see; I may see.

মর্মের্মা f. a. p. and tenses.

Or :--

मर्चेट केंग में भेर। and so on.

And so on, conjugating 577 regularly.

The following is more Bookish:-

अर्थेट नशक्ता। f. a. p.

#### OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present and Past: Oh that I were seeing, or had seen.

#### PARTICIPLES.

Present:

প্রইেম।

Seeing.

Perfect:

প্রুট্রে।

Seen.

Com. Perfect: ঝর্লিন্সেম্ব্রা Having seen.

Future:

About to see.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

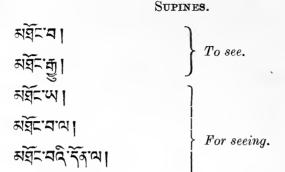
श्रव्यामन (रे)।  $He\ who\ sees\ or\ saw.$  The seer. अर्थेट्.य. (रे)। शर्वर.य.र्।  $igg\} He \ who \ will \ see. \ \ The \ seer.$ পর্টু: मुँ दे। शर्वेट्-मानवः (रे)।

See also the other examples under this head in AFTT I To send, No. VI.

# OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

| र्शेव्ट-खे                                                                      | Seeing.                                                                                                                  |  |  |  |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|--|--|
| মরুুু∵নল                                                                        | Seeing; because, since, when, whileam, is, or are seeing.                                                                |  |  |  |
| র <u>ই</u> ন'ম।                                                                 | Seeing; at, for, thougham, is, or are seeing.                                                                            |  |  |  |
| মর্ <u>ট</u> -মেমেম।                                                            | As since an ison an accius                                                                                               |  |  |  |
| পর্বুহ্-ম.জ।                                                                    | As, sinceam, is or are seeing.                                                                                           |  |  |  |
| মর্ট্র-মে।                                                                      | ) ,,,,,,,                                                                                                                |  |  |  |
| সর্বু : अर्बे : त।                                                              | $\left\{ Whilst\ seeing. \right\}$                                                                                       |  |  |  |
| মর্লু মেন্ম।                                                                    | $Though \ seeing.$                                                                                                       |  |  |  |
| सर्वेद-व।                                                                       | If, when, thougham, is or are seeing.                                                                                    |  |  |  |
| Past.                                                                           |                                                                                                                          |  |  |  |
|                                                                                 |                                                                                                                          |  |  |  |
| পর্টু : ধরা।                                                                    | ) ,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,                                                                                  |  |  |  |
| सब्दू: वृक्ष ।<br>सब्दू: वृक्ष ।                                                | $\left. ight\} Having \ seen.$                                                                                           |  |  |  |
|                                                                                 | Having seen.  Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.                                                                |  |  |  |
| भक्त.यैर.के।                                                                    | Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.                                                                              |  |  |  |
| भक्ट.चैट.चग ।<br>भक्ट.चैट.के।                                                   | Seen; because, since, whenwas                                                                                            |  |  |  |
| सब्दः वैदः यहा।<br>सब्दः वैदः यहा।                                              | Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.                                                                              |  |  |  |
| মর্কু: বীদ্দেশধা<br>মর্কু: বীদ্দেশ<br>মর্কু: বীদ্দেশ।<br>মর্কু: বীদ্দেশ।        | Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.  Having seen.  If, when, thoughwas or were                                   |  |  |  |
| सब्दः नुदः न ।<br>सब्दः नुदः न ।<br>सब्दः नुदः न ।<br>सब्दः नुदः न ।            | Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.  Having seen.  If, when, thoughwas or were seen.  Because, thoughwas or were |  |  |  |
| भग्नेंट.चैट.चीश्.।<br>भग्नेंट.चैट.च.भश।<br>भग्नेंट.चैट.च.भश।<br>भग्नेंट.चैट.चश। | Seen; because, since, whenwas or were seen.  Having seen.  If, when, thoughwas or were seen.  Because, thoughwas or were |  |  |  |



सर्वेट कुरे देवाय।

VERBAL NOUNS OR ADJECTIVES.

#### INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present : ন্র্নির । To see.

Perfect : মর্ট্রেট্রেট্র To have seen.

Future : মর্ম্মের্মের To be about to see ; To be seen.

X.—Neuter, One-Rooted Colloquial Verb 주지국기 To be glad, To rejoice.

# Root ५११८। throughout.

Conjugated throughout like Colloquial মার্মির To see, save that in the forms in ইম্বির and ইম্বির the auxiliary particle is ইম্বারের of স্বী, while the Imperative is ব্যারের বিশা। or ব্যারের বিশা। or ব্যারের বিশা। Rejoice, Be glad.

The construction throughout is in the Nominative, save that in the Hortative Mood it is in the Dative with A, as in  $\overline{A}$ , as in  $\overline{A}$ ,  $\overline{A}$ . To see, No. IX.

XI.—Neuter, One-Rooted LITERARY Verb 주키유'지 | To be glad, To rejoice.

# Root 547 throughout.

N.B.—The construction is in the Nominative case, except where otherwise indicated. The 製で見る is omitted.

#### INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I am glad: I rejoice.

दमाद। f. a. p.

Or, intensively:-

5निव समा रहा। f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am rejoicing.

दमाद यः भेर

रमाद : कर्जना

नम्त्र मर्पेन or बर्नम or पेनियानेन।

Or :--

বৃদাব 'ঐ ঐ বি and so on; or বৃদাব 'নী' ঐ বা and so on.

Or :-

न्माद नायम्

त्नाद न दत्ना or occ. chiefly interr. धेन्।

नमाद पार्थेव।

Or :---

বৃদ্য শৈত্য ৰ and so on.

Or, seldom used now:-

न्नाद प्रवेद (or वेट ) सकेश।

न्यादः यहितः (or हिरः) मान्दा

ব্দাব বৰ্ৰীৰ ( or ৰ্বিম ) মঠিম or দাবৰ or মঠম বংশীৰ।

Past: I rejoiced: I was glad.

दमाद शिंद | f. a. p.

Or :-

५माद प्रस्तुर र्हे। f. a. p.

Or :---

त्नाद प्रमुद स्थित | and so on.

Imperfect: I was rejoicing.

Same as Present, context indicating Tense.

 ${\bf Perfect}:\ I\ have\ rejoiced.$ 

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had rejoiced.

नियात्रः मुंदः हैं। f. a. p.

Or, though not common:-

বৃদ্দান ক্রম আঁব | and so on.

Future: I shall rejoice: I shall be glad.

दमाद स्प्रिट । f. a. p.

Or:--

न्माद निर्माद मिन्न f. a. p.

Or :--

বৃদ্ধ দু দ্বি । I am (or have) to rejoice.

And so on.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If .. I shall rejoice.

Or :--

(Present Root) "57575 f. a. p.

Or :-

(Present Root) 5773 WT | f. a. p.

Past: If.. I would rejoice.

Or :-

Perfect: If .. I would have rejoiced.

# POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can rejoice or be glad.

र्नाद प्राप्ता f. a. p.

Or :-

नुमाद पर वृद्ध। f. a. p.

Or :-

ব্দাব প্রবাস্টির । f. a. p.

Past: I could rejoice.

Same as Present.

Or :-

বৃদ্ধ: বৃহ্ণ ব' ই । and so on.

Or :--

दमाद : ध्रुव : दा : भेत | and so on.

Or :--

**र्**माद सुन श्रॅट | f. a. p.

Or :--

न्नातः तरः वृद्धाः स्टिः। f. a. p.

Perfect: I could have rejoiced.

र्नार ध्रायाधिर। and so on.

Or :--

বৃদাব বৃহাধার্ম and so on.

Or :--

नित्रश्चरायात्रीमा। f. a. p.

Or :--

दमाद : वर वुरु : य द ूमा। f. a. p.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall rejoice: I may rejoice.

श्च.प्रा... र्यात यर त्यीर।

Or :-

शुः वेशः : न्मादः वरः छ।

Or :-

शुःनेशः : नगतः स्टार

Or :-

नमाय पर र्शेन।

Or :--

नगदःश्री

f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would or might rejoice.

বৃদাব : মূব : মাধ্য and so on.

Perfect: Perhaps I would or might have rejoiced.

### HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to rejoice; I must rejoice.

... त्रानुनाद प्राप्त मिला f. a. p.

Or :-

रमाद:यर:व। f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have rejoiced.

শের্দার বহ বুর্নীর হাতীর। and so on.

#### PURPOSIVE.

f. a. p.

or :— नुमाद:मदे:सुर:रु।

Or :---

न्नाद वर द्युर वर रेंद्र र

Past: In order that I might rejoice.

Same as first three forms of Present.

Or :--

न्यादः यदः मुदः यदेः न्द्रिः f. a. p.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

Let me, etc. rejoice.

#### PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to rejoice; I may rejoice.

··· भारमादायशार्केमा। f. a. p.

Past: I was allowed to rejoice; I might rejoice.

···মেব্দাব্বেশ ঠেনা্নাম্পীর। and so on.

# OPTATIVE MOOD.

Oh that I were glad or rejoicing.

नमान न हे सा हर।

Or :-

र्मार वर मुरु र राखर ।

<u> ব্দাব বহ র্বিনা ইনা।</u>

f. a. p

IMPERATIVE.

र्याद यर गुर लेग।

Or :--

र्याद पर नु।

... ल.रचार.चर.रम्ब्रा

Rejoice, Be glad.

स-दमाद।

रमाय पर सार मुर दिन।

বনাব-বহ-মূ-ব।

…৸৴ঀঀ৴ঽ৴য়৾৴ঀৗ৾য়।

Perfect:

Do not rejoice. Be not glad.

PARTICIPLES.

रमायःय। Present:

Rejoicing.

न्याद'र्खर'न। न्याद'र्खर'न।

iggr Rejoiced.

Com. Perfect: 542 474 | Having rejoiced.

দ্বান্থেন ন্ম্ ন্ম্ না ব্লান্থেন না ব্লান্থিন না ব্লান্থিন না বল্পিন না বল্পিন না বলিক ন

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

Same as in মহাত্র To see, No. IX.

# Past.

Same as in AFT To see, No. IX, substituting & for JT, and & taking 5 instead of \$|

VERBAL NOUN OR ADJECTIVE.

「本内ス・石・(青) | Rejoicing; A, or the rejoicing. 「本内ス・右・ス・(青) | The having rejoiced. 「本内ス・ス・フ・ロ・(青) | The being about to rejoice. SUPINES.

**イ型ス・コエ** 1

Or:--

To rejoice or be glad.

रमादःइ।

त्मात प्रति देव दु (or देव प्राप्त or दुनि दु)। For rejoicing.

# Infinitive Mood.

Present: 54341

To rejoice or be glad.

Past:

্বৃদ্ধিক্রম্ব।

বৃদ্ধিক্রম্ব।

To have rejoiced or been glad.

रचिर.चर.४ चीर.च।

Future: 주피즈'지즈'피크작'리 | To be about to rejoice or be glad.

**とはなっている。** 

XII.—Passive 4-Rooted, LITERARY Verb निर्दे निर्देश or निर्देश To be sent.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Objective or DATIVE case in A

Otherwise it is the same as the Active Literary Verb 455.4 To send, No. VII. as far as and including the Potential Mood.

# HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to be sent; I must be sent.

यद्राः (or महिंदः) यदःदर्गेशं f. a. p.

Or :--

मॉर्नेट्र न्यू र f. a. p.

Past: I ought to have been sent.

नदर (or मोर्दर) नदःद्वेशियाधीत। and so on.

Then it is again similar to Verb No. VII. as far as and including the Optative Mood.

IMPERATIVE MOOD:

PARTICIPLES.

|               | TANTION DES.          |        |                   |
|---------------|-----------------------|--------|-------------------|
| Present:      | महिंदा।               | Ì      | Being sent.       |
|               | म्रोर्टेरमी'ॲर्'य।    | )      | Deing sent.       |
|               | <b>コ</b> 5に' <b>コ</b> | 7      |                   |
|               | 75C. R. 2             | ;<br>} | Been sent.        |
|               | ব5c:∄ৱ'ব।             | j      |                   |
| Com. Perfect: | <u> </u>              | ]      |                   |
|               | ব5় হে:হ্ৰ:মুধ্য      | }      | Having been sent. |
|               | ন5⊏'ইৰ্'ন'ঊৰ্'না      | j      |                   |
|               | ন্দ্ৰিমেশ্বীন।        | ]      |                   |
| Future :      | ন্ট্রি:বম:৭কুম:ব।     |        |                   |
|               | गर्ने इ.च.            | }      | About to be sent. |
|               | मोर्नेट कुं प्येष स । |        |                   |
|               | শূর্ট নু              |        |                   |
| 47            | ~                     | -      |                   |

#### PERIPHRASTIC.

#### PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Same as in Colloquial Passive Verb ন্ট্ৰি To be sent, No. VIII.

#### SUPINES.

#### VERBAL NOUNS.

महिंद्रः मरः मुज्ञः यः वै। महिंद्रः मरः **यगुरः** यः वै। महिंद्रः मुज्ञः यो वे।

The being about to be sent.

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

To be sent.

To have been sent.

XIII.—Active, 2-Rooted Colloquial Verb affa To go

Roots.

Present:

दर्गे।

Perfect:

श्रदः or द्वेद।

Future:

दर्गे।

Imperative:

(क्षेप् or क्ष्रिंक or कुँग।) With Particle (क्षेप or क्ष्रिंग।) when appropriate.

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Nominative case.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I go.

ব্র্নী f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am going.

<u>द्र्</u>योभी भेरा

दर्मो में ज्ञेर or दर्मा

दर्ने ने सेर or दर्मा or सेर यरिता

Past: I went.

र्ह्में or हुन्। f. a. p.

Or :--

श्राम्याये

মূদ্ৰমন্ত্ৰী or occ. ইহ or rarely, chiefly interr. মুধ্

र्सेट.च.इर. " परेची " लूबी

Or:--

খ্রীব্রমান্দ্রবা and so on.

Imperfect: I was going.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Perfect: I have gone.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had gone.

Same as Past.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentences:-

র্মান্ত্র and so on.

Or :--

শ্রীবারমার্মির। and so on.

Future: I shall go.

द्रमें ऑद । f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्भोभाष्यद। and so on.

Or :---

··· अत्र्र्ने Wंदेर्। I am (or have) to go.

f. a. p.

Or:--

ব্ৰী কু খব। and so on. I am (or have) to go.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If...I shall go.

(Present Root) "ব্লেম্নি f. a. p.

Or :-

(Present Root) प्राप्त मि स्मिन्। and so on.

Past: If ... I would go.

(Perfect Root)...Same as Present, context indicating Tense.

Or :-

(Perfect Root) ত্র মান্ত (or খ্রীক্মা) অব। and so on.

Perfect: If...I would have gone.
(Perfect Root) ত্র্মান্ত (or খ্রীরামা) আঁড়া and so on.

Or :-

 $(Perfect Root) \cdots \overline{\eta} \cdots \overline{\widetilde{\eta}} \overline{\zeta} \cdot (or \overline{\widetilde{J}} \overline{\eta}) \overline{\widetilde{W}} \overline{\zeta} | f. a. p.$ 

Or :=

(Perfect Root) তের স্থান (or খ্রীরা) মুনুনা। f. a. p.

### POTENTIAL MOOD.

Present: I can go.

द्र्या f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्ने मुद्राओंटा। f. a. p.

Or :--

त्र्ने धुन गुः भेरि। and so on.

Past: I could go.

র্নু প্রবাধীর। and so on.

Perfect: I could have gone.

त्र्ने व्यापार्भेत्। and so on.

Or :-

दर्ने बुदयत्नुम्। f. a. p.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall go; I may go.
দাইনা ট্রব্ ে ব্লু অনি | f. a. p.

मारेना ने दार प्रमा ने प्रमा भी बात so on.

दर्भोग्नेप्येन्यद्र। f. a. p.

दम्मिः भेदादम् । f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I might go.

मार्डेना नेद क्षा धेव दा ( or श्रेंद ना ) भेव | and so on.

ষ্ট্রীবারা (or র্মিরারা) জীবারাবার f. a. p.

प्रेक्स (or श्रेट्स) ध्रेक्स्म् f. a. p.

Perfect: Perhaps I might have gone.

শৃত্তিশ্' শ্ৰীক্'ম' (or ইছিম'ন') ইছিম্' and so on.

ষ্ট্রব্ব (or র্মিন্ন) অন্বিন্মন্ত্র f. a. p.

थ्रेक्ट्य (or श्रॅट्स्य) ध्रेन्द्रक्त्री f. a. p.

# HORTATIVE MOOD.

Present: I ought to go; I must go.

दर्गा दर्गीश। f. a. p.

दर्ने दर्ने शः की व्यद and so on.

Or :—. ॡर्नें द्नेंश ॲंट | f. a. p.

Or vulgarly:— द्र्नोर्नो में स्प्र| and so on.

Or :— 즉편 독편 ॲ도 | f. a. p.

द्र्यों द्र्यों में Wal and so on.

Past: I ought to have gone.

दर्ने निमान (or vulgarly निमान) भेता and so on.

Or :=

PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: In order that, or so that, I may go.

त्रों नित्रे रेंदिय। f. a. p.

Past: In order that, or so that, I might go.

हुँब्र.सदे. (or श्रूट.सदे.) र्रेब्र.स f. a. p.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

ম'ন্নু। (Pronounced Män-do) Do not go.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

द्र्यों रहुम् (हिम्)।

Let me, etc. go.

PERMISSIVE MOOD.

Present: I am allowed to go: I may go.

दिनों केना f. a. p.

Or :--

वर्भें केंग में भेंद। and so on.

(N.B.—Other Tenses may be formed by conjugating ইন্মা

OPTATIVE MOOD.

Present: Oh that, or would that, I were going.

Past: Oh that, or would that, I had gone.

(N.B.—The expressions in ব্ৰিনা are not much used in Colloquial, being rather Literary.)

# PARTICIPLES.

 Present:
 বৃদ্ধীবা
 Going.

 শ্বীবা
 Going.

 শ্বীবা
 Gone.

 শ্বীবা
 Gone.

 শ্বীবা
 Having gone.

 শ্বীবা
 Having gone.

Future: ৭শু কু খেব্য | About to go.

ACTIVE, PERIPHRASTIC, OR SUBSTANTIVE.

## OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial Verb হার্মিন To see, No. IX, ব্রম্ taking হুঁ, হার্মিন taking হুঁ, and হুঁর taking হুঁ If হাঁমেন be used it would take হুঁ।

SUPINES.

VERBAL NOUNS OR ADJECTIVES.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

XIV.—Active 2-Rooted LITERARY Verb 국河지기 To go.

ROOTS.

Same as in Colloquial Verb, No. XIII, omitting ক্র্না

N.B.—The construction throughout is in the Nominative case.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I go.

द्र्योद्। f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am going.

वर्गेनिः भेरिः

वर्गेकी स्त्री or वर्गिक्री

बर्चों मी २०५५ वर्षेत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्य वर्षेत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्षेत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र वर्येत्र

त्र्नेत्र्भित्र्न्। and so on.

Past: I went.

र्सेट्टें or द्वेदर्दें। f. a. p.

Or :--

ਸੁੱਕ ਜੋਂ ਜ a. p.

Or :--

श्रांट पायी वार्वे।

श्रिम्म प्रमुची or occ., chiefly interr. ध्रेव वि

श्रॅं='रा'भेव'र्वे ।

Or :--

युन्य भेन ने। and so on.

Imperfect: I was going.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or :--

श्राद्भाष्ट्र (or द्वित्राद्भा) भित्रात्र्भा and so on.

Or :--

র্মিচ'ঙ্গিচ' (or খ্রীর'ঙ্গিচ') অবি-মান্সীর'র । and so on.

Perfect: I have gone.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had gone.

Same as Past.

Or, seldom used save at end of sentence:-

र्शेट (or देन) नुसार्थेन नि and so on.

 $\begin{array}{c} \operatorname{Or}:-\\ \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}\overline{\mathbb{A}}, \ \ (\operatorname{or}\ \ \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}^{d}) \ \ \widetilde{\mathbb{A}}\overline{\mathbb{A}}, \ \ \widetilde{\mathbb{A}} \end{array} ] \quad \mathrm{f.\ a.\ p.}$ 

Future: I shall go.

त्र्ने न्दरत्युर रें। f. a. p.

दर्भें नर उदि। f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्भा भेराहा f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall go.

(Present Root) … ず (any simple Future).

 $\mathbf{Past}: If...I \ would \ go.$ 

(Perfect Root) ত্র ক্রেন্স (or ব্রির্ম) অনুর্ Or, same as Present.

Perfect: If... I would have gone.

(Perfect Root) ··· ず…ずにつ (or 對する) 诞行行 and so on.

# POTENTIAL MOOD.

Same as Potential Mood in Literary 75.7 | To send, No. VII, using Root ATI throughout.

#### PROBABILITY.

Present: Perhaps I shall go; I may go.

श्. पश ... (simple Future).

বেলীবেম খ্রীমুর্নী f. a. p.

Or :--

दर्ने रें रें रें f. a. p.

Past: Perhaps I would go; I might go.

त्र्नें श्रेन्य भेन्दें। and so on.

Perfect: Perhaps I would have gone; I might have gone. বৃদ্ধীন্দ্ৰি বিশ্বী বিশ

HORTATIVE MOOD.

Similar to Literary 75.7 | To send, No. VII.

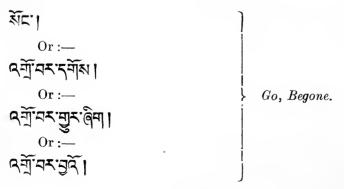
PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Similar to Literary  $\widetilde{\gamma}\widetilde{\zeta}\widetilde{\zeta}\widetilde{\gamma}$  To send, No. VII, using Root  $\widetilde{\zeta}\widetilde{\widetilde{\gamma}}\widetilde{\widetilde{\gamma}}$  in Present Tense, and  $\widetilde{\zeta}\widetilde{\zeta}\widetilde{\widetilde{\gamma}}$  or  $\widetilde{\widetilde{\zeta}}\widetilde{\zeta}\widetilde{\widetilde{\zeta}}$  in Past Tense.

PRECATIVE MOOD.

PERMISSIVE AND OPTATIVE MOOD.

IMPERATIVE.



PARTICIPLES. दर्गेंग्य। Present: Going. र्शेट.च. or द्वेश.च। Perfect: श्रेंट. (or द्वेश) क्र्या श्र्राट. (or द्वेथ.) ह्वथ्या श्रॅट'न' (or येब'ना) भेब'ना। Com. Perfect: র্মিন্ন (or দ্রীর ) র্হম্ম সাম্পর্ম । } Having gone. श्र्रा. (वर द्वेष.) चुरे.त.लुरे.त। पर्चे. वर. पंचर. व। दर्गे वर नग Future: About to go. दर्गेंग्र। ৭পুরি

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC OR SUBSTANTIVE.

Same as in Colloquial No. XIII, save for the following:-

# PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Same as in Colloquial No. XIII.

# VERBAL NOUNS.

| दर्जे.च. (के)।                                                | Going; a or the going.                           |
|---------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| श्रांट.च. (बु)।                                               | The having rese                                  |
| श्रेवयः (वै)।                                                 | The having gone.                                 |
| ८ज्रॅ.चर.४च्रीर.च. (४)।                                       |                                                  |
| दर्ने पर:5 <sup>:व</sup> (दे)।                                | The being about to go.                           |
| < न्त्रों क्वुं प्येन'या (ने)।                                | j                                                |
|                                                               | SUPINES.                                         |
| दर्गे वर।                                                     |                                                  |
| <del>৭</del> মূত্ৰ।                                           | $rac{1}{3}$ To go.                               |
| वर् <u>न</u> ीर ।                                             | j                                                |
| दर् <del>चे प्रदे देव</del> नु ।                              |                                                  |
| <u> त</u> ्र्ने न्त्रे ने | $\begin{tabular}{ll} For \ going. \end{tabular}$ |
| दर्ने नदे से र रु।                                            |                                                  |

# INFINITIVE MOOD.

| Present; | देश य                          | To go.        |
|----------|--------------------------------|---------------|
|          | श्रद्धाः or धुन्य।             |               |
| Perfect: | श्रिंट' (or युँदे) क्या        | <i>m</i> ,    |
|          | शूट. (or क्रेथ) च्रुथत।        | To have gone. |
|          | श्रीरातः (or द्वीताया) स्पेता। |               |
|          | -                              |               |

द्या पर द्यार व। दर्ने पर प्राया

Future: ৫লি'ব্ৰ'শ্ৰহ্ম'বা

त्र्<u>न</u>ें कु प्येष्ट्रा

दर्भे न।

To be about to go.

XV.—Two-rooted Literary Verb 국핏자기 To become, To be changed, To be turned, To grow, etc.

N.B.—This verb is often used as an Auxiliary verb, and the way in, and extent to which, it is so employed, is best seen in the other Literary Conjugations. It is purely classical.

The construction here is in the Nominative case.

ROOTS.

Perfect: - TI Future: 375 Present : ব্সুম্|

Imperative: 57 | but sometimes 97|

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I become.

दम्दःदें। f. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am becoming.

वसुर गुँव भेर रें।

त्मुरणीश्रेष्ट्रेरें or त्र्मामी।

द्युर'गुैद'र्सेर'र्ने or दन्मामि or सेर्'श'रेर'रें।

Past: I became.

मुर or मुर रें। f. a. p.

मुरःयःधेवः दे।

मुर्दाद्र्मामा or occ. chiefly interr. धेदादी

मुरायाधिक व

Imperfect: I was becoming.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or :-

मुरायाधेदार्वे। and so on.

Or :--

मुर विद भेर या भेर में। and so on.

Perfect: I have become.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had become.

Same as Past.

Or, though seldom used:-

मुरदशर्थेर् रें। f. a. p.

Or :-

मुद्रभेंद्रिं f. a. p.

Future: I shall become.

त्नुर पर त्नुर रें। f. a. p.

त्नुर: नर: नुत्। f. a. p

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall become.

(Present Root) " (simple Future).

Past: If... I would become.

0r :-

(Perfect Root) ত্র্যান্ত্র বাদ্ধির বি

Perfect: If... I would have become.

(Perfect Root) "ব্" শুর্'র'ঊ্ব'ইঁ । and so on.

POTENTIAL MOOD, PROBABILITY, HORTATIVE MOOD.

(As in Literary Verb 57371 To be glad, No. XI.)

### PURPOSIVE MOOD.

Present: So that I may become.

Past: So that I might become.

# PRECATIVE MOOD.

## PERMISSIVE AND OPTATIVE MOODS.

As in Literary 7|55.7| To send, No. VII, keeping the construction in the Nominative Case, and using the appropriate Roots.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD.

## PARTICIPLES.

## Com. Perfect : गुर-कॅर-प्रथेदय।

गुर-बेद-प्रथेदय।

पुर-बेद-प्रथेदय।

द्युर-पर-प्रवाद-प्य-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-प्रवाद-

PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

 त्रमुर.य. (ते or वै।
 (ते or वै।

 त्रमुर.यावद (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 मुर.य. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यर.व्युर.य. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं.यं. वृत्य. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. कृ. वि. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

 त्रमुर.यं. (ते or वै)।
 (ते or वै)।

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

Same as in মার্মিন To see, No. XI, using the appropriate Roots.

Both ব্যুম and মুম take 5 and মুম।

SUPINES.

VERBAL NOUNS.

Rनुराय (वै)।

Recoming. A or the becoming.

The having become.

Rनुरायर प्रमुख्य (वै)।

Rनुरायर प्रमुख्य (वै)।

Rनुरायर कुं भेदाय (वै)।

Rनुराकुं भेदाय (वै)।

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present : বৃলুহ'ন।

নুহ'ন।

Perfect : নুহ'ন।

নুহ'ন।

নুহ'নিব'ন।

নুহ'নিব'ন।

নুহ'নিব'ন।

নুহ'নিব'ন।

द्युर:वर:द्युर:व।

Future: ৭নী্ম-বম-বী-ব| ৭নীম-বম-নী=ধান।

etc.

বর্ম:ঐ্নুত্র

To be about to become.

XVI.—Active, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 3517 To do, To make,

N.B.—The construction is in the AGENTIVE case, save where otherwise indicated.

ROOTS.

Present: ব্রিন্ | Perfect: ব্রুম্বা, ব্রুম্বা, ব্রুম্বা, ব্রুম্বা, ব্রুম্বা, ব্রুম্বা, ব্রুম্বা, ব্রুম্বা,

The construction is throughout similar to that of Colloquial  $\sqrt{5}$  To send, No. VI, up to and including the Optative Mood, save for the following:—

 IMPERATIVE MOOD.

 결환' 취계 |

 결환' 취계 |

 결화' 취계 |

 결차' 취계 |

 원 ' 경기 |

 원 ' 경기 |

 Do not do.

N.B.—The form  $\frac{3}{5}$ 7 Do is probably really  $\frac{3}{5}$ 8!

PARTICIPLES.

As in Colloquial 755.7 To send, No. VI.

ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial AST To send, No. VI.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

# Present.

한국기 Doing.

[기숙] Because, since, when, while... doing.

And so on, as in Colloquial निर्देश To send, No. VI.

# Past.

And so on, as in Colloquial निर्दे न To send, No. VI.

SUPINES, AND VERBAL NOUNS AND INFINITIVE MOOD.

As in Colloquial AFE'A' To send, No. VI.

XVII.—Active, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb, 35.4 To do, To make, etc.

Roots.

Present:

Perfect: As in Active Colloquial Verb, No. XVI.

Future:

Imperative: বুঁঝা (প্ৰা)

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present: I do; I make.

35.51 f. a. p.

Intensive: I do do; I do make.

ਤ੍ਰੇਤ ਪ੍ਰਤ: ਤ੍ਰੇਤ ਤ੍ਰੇਤ ਜਿ. a. p.

Periphrastic: I am making.

व्रेन्गीन स्पन्ते।

नुदःगुंदःभेरः रें or यदमार्गे।

बेन किन स्पर्ने के वर्षेत्र के वर्षेत्र संक्रिक के वर्षेत्र संक्रिक के वर्षेत्र संक्रिक के वर्षेत्र संक्रिक के

Or, elegantly, but seldom used :-

नुद्रक्षित्रमञ्जू

वेद्रारेटाम्प्रदे

वुद्र-हिद्र-सर्वेश का माद्रदें or सर्वेश याधीन हैं।

Past: I made.

বুষ'র্মা f. a. p.

Or :--

च्यायायीय व

वुक्षयत्रुम्में or occ., chiefly interr. धेक्कें।

नुश्राय ध्येव वे ।

Or :-

지시·新元子 | f. a. p.

Imperfect: I was making.

Same as Periphrastic Present, context showing Tense.

Or:--

নুষামান্দ্রী and so on.

Or :--

त्रेद्रगौद्धाः भ्यान्य भिद्दी and so on.

मुझ निहार्भेर मार्भेर हैं। and so on.

Perfect: I have made.

Same as Past.

Pluperfect: I had made.

Same as Past.

Or :--

**দু**ষার্মির রুঁ। f. a. p.

Or :---

**与**取るて、対下、下 f. a. p.

Or, though seldom used :-

বৃষাবৃষাই বি a. p.

Future: I shall make.

ਤੇਨ'ਖ਼ਨ'ਤੁਨ੍ਹੇ। f. a. p.

Or:— 회국·목자국민자국 f. a. p.

ਤ੍ਰੇਤ ਔਵਵਾਂ | f. a. p.

Or :--

53 f. a. p.

SUBJUNCTIVE AND CONDITIONAL MOODS.

Present: If... I shall make.

(Present Root)... (any simple Future as above).

The rest as in Literary निर्देश To send, No. VII.

The other Moods as in the same Verb No. VII, down to and including the Optative Mood, with appropriate Roots, etc.

 अविकाश
 Imperative Mood.

 अविकाश
 Make.

 अविकाश
 Make.

 अविकाश
 Do not make.

 अविकाश
 Do not make.

### PARTICIPLES.

| Present:      | <u> च</u> ित्रम्।                                                                                                                                                                         | Making.             |
|---------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------|
|               | 24.41                                                                                                                                                                                     |                     |
| Perfect:      | विश्व कर य                                                                                                                                                                                | Made.               |
|               | वेश.चुर्य.रा।                                                                                                                                                                             |                     |
| Com. Perfect: | <b>3</b> शया क्षेत्रय।                                                                                                                                                                    | Having made.        |
| Future:       | चु-व।<br>चु-त्र्नु-भेद-य।<br>चु-त्र-त्र्नु-भेद-य।<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा<br>चु-त्र-त्र-वा | igg  About to make. |

# ACTIVE OR PERIPHRASTIC PARTICIPLES.

| होत्रसम्ब ।<br>होत्रसम्ब ।                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               | He who or that which makes or does; the maker or doer.     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------|
| तुसःस्मिन्।<br>-                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         | He who or that which made or did.                          |
| 3.4.21                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |                                                            |
| ਤੇ <b>5</b> ' ਸ <b>'</b> ' ਸ਼ਹੂ ' | He who or that which will make or do, or is to make or do. |

Or the following simple construction may be used:—

युनाः क्षेत्रः नुद्रः सर्दर् त्यम् शःदे। The carpenter who makes the box.
युनाः क्षेत्रः नुद्रः सर्दर् त्यम् शःदे। The carpenter who made the box.
युनाः क्षेत्रः नुद्रः नुद्रः सर्दर् त्यम् शःदे। The carpenter who will make, or is to make, the box.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

As in Colloquial 3571 | To make, No. XVI.

### VERBAL NOUNS.

র্বিন্দ (বি)।

স্থান (বি)।

স্থান (বি)।

স্থান বি)।

## INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present : তুর্বা To make. **34.11** Perfect: Javána! To have made. चेश.चुब.त। विश्वायाः भूषः य। वुरःसरःदगुरःव। 35:45:3:41 े**ुर**:यर:म्|३श:य| ব্রিণক্রু'অঁশ্বম। To be about to make. Future: বি.শূন্দ্রর। 371 नुदादम् अन्य। च.उज्.लंबना

XVIII.—Passive, 4-Rooted Colloquial Verb 출독별 친구각 or 친독되는 To be made, To be done, etc.

Conjugated on the lines of Passive Colloquial Verb (755)

XIX.—Passive, 4-Rooted LITERARY Verb 577 | To be made, To be done, etc.

Conjugated on the lines of Passive LITERARY Verb 775.75.71 To be sent, No. XII, as far as, and including, the Compound Perfect of the Participles, and with the appropriate Roots, etc. Then:—

### PARTICIPLES.

ন্ত্ৰীব্যবহান্ত্ৰীব। ন্ত্ৰীব্যবহান্ত্ৰীব্যবহান কুন্ত্ৰীভূতীক্ষা কুন্ত্ৰী

About to be made or done.

OTHER PARTICIPIAL EXPRESSIONS.

#### Present.

And so on as in LITERARY ACTIVE, No. XVII.

#### Past.

기계 Having been made or done.

[ Because, since, when . . . is or was made or done. .

And so on as in LITERARY ACTIVE, No. XVII.

#### SUPINES.

To be made or done.

VERBAL NOUN.

यय (वै)।

Being made or done. A or the being made or done.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

571 चै.स्री.लुब्रन।

Future : ব্রীবৃদ্ধীবৃদ্ধী

**गुँर**:यर:प्रगुर:य।

35.42.4.4

Past:

नश्चर्यर प्रेक्ट्य।

To be made or done.

To have been made or done,

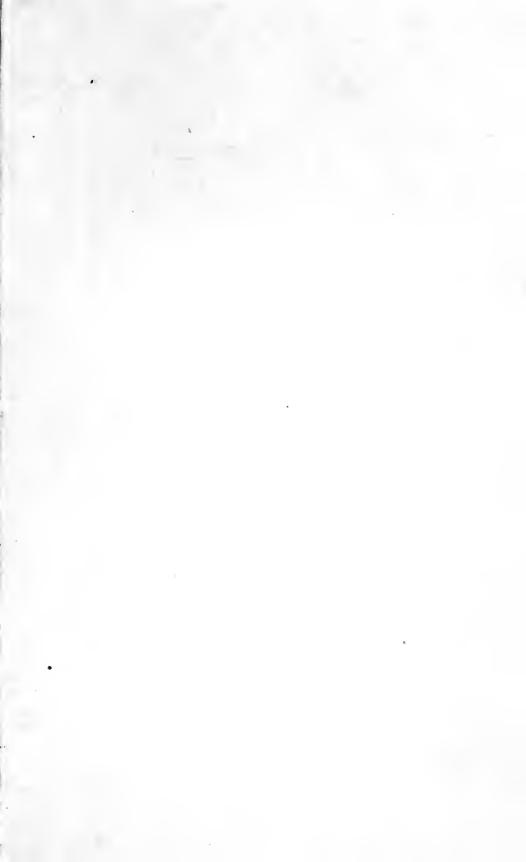
XX.—Passive Literary Verb 35.45.47.7 To be made or done, etc.

In conjugating this Verb, 3545 remains constant throughout, while the rest is in LITERARY W54 To be, No. II.

Or, while keeping 35 35 constant throughout, LITERARY 35 TO No. XV may be substituted for LITERARY 35 31

But then the meaning is,—To become made or done, To be about to become made or done,

FINIS.



PL 3613 H3 1912 CO OF WISHER OF THE SERVINGS



